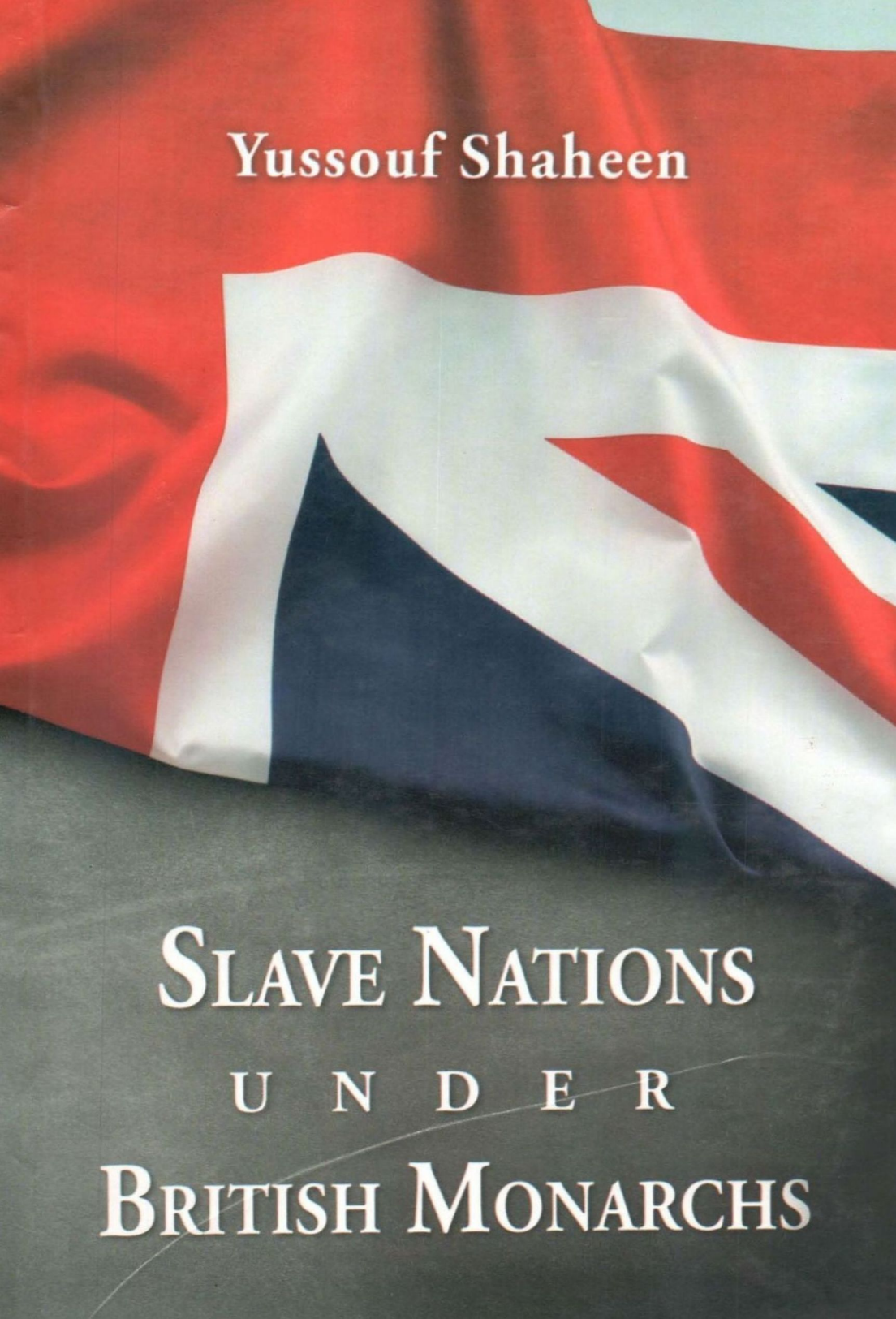




Yussouf Shaheen

SLAVE NATIONS
U N D E R
BRITISH MONARCHS

Yussouf Shaheen

Slave
Nations
Under
British
Monarchs

Books authored by
Yussouf Shaheen:

Artificial Borders of the World
Fall of Native Languages of the Americas
Rise and Fall of Sanskrit
Rise and Fall of gods – In Historical Perspective
William the Bastard and his descendants
World Confederation of the Peoples
The World of Conquerors
Truth Untold

Seven other books in Sindhi and Urdu

پاران ایم ایچ پنهور انسٹیٹیوٹ آف سنڌ اسٽڊيز، ڄامشورو۔

Digitized by M. H. Panhwar Institute of Sindh Studies, Jamshoro.

Dedicated
to the
Great Freedom Fighter
Boudicca

- Chief of the Iceni Celtic tribe; under whose command, most of the nations of Britain fought against the Romans in 61 AD, to liberate their mother land. She gathered around 230,000 Britons supported by a large number of women, but failed. Roughly 80,000 Britons (Celts) were killed. Boudicca was flogged, gang-raped by the Romans along with her two minor daughters aged 9 and 11, leaving them naked and tied up to the ground.

- Yussouf Shaheen
May 26, 2015

Copyright © 2014 by Yussouf Shaheen

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical photocopying, recording or otherwise, without the prior permission of the publisher.

This book is sold subject to the condition that it shall not, by way of trade or otherwise, be lent, re-sold, hired out or otherwise circulated without the publisher's prior consent in any form of binding or cover other than that in which it is published and without a similar condition including this condition being imposed on the subsequent purchaser.

Title: Danish Khan



Sambara Publications
246/D-6, PECHS, Karachi, Pakistan
Email: sambarapublications@gmail.com
yussoufshaheen@yahoo.com

Publisher's Note

Document of Liberties

We are highly privileged to publish fourth book of our noted author, historian and poet Yussouf Shaheen: The present work titled 'Slave Nations Under British Monarchs' - a document on liberties is a masterpiece in micro-history, has been already published in the United States. Writing such a monumental document needed not only thorough knowledge but also immense courage. Shaheen is imbibed with both of these qualities. In this work the history revolves around 'William the Bastard' also known as William the Conqueror - a Norman, who invaded and conquered England in 1066 AD. His descendants are still holding control over England since millennia. The author says, "William was an illiterate and spoke a dialect of French. When the people of England rebelled against William, "he planned the genocide of the people of North England by way of general massacres and famine". He also transferred the ownership rights of the entire landed property of England to his Norman warriors'.

The author further says, the present Queen Elizabeth II of the United Kingdom is the great-grand daughter of William the Bastard. She is the main beneficiary of the 'conquest' made by the William and thereby has achieved 'Divine Status' and has become the 'Fount of Justice', the 'Fount of Honor' and 'Source of all Dignities.' She is considered above the law who "cannot do any wrong." Queen Elizabeth II is Commander-in-Chief of the Armed Forces i.e., the British Army, the Royal Navy and the Royal Air Force. She has also become the 'Head of the Church of

England' in contrast to the Pope of the Roman Catholic Church. All the elected members of both the Houses of Parliament (so-called Mother of Parliaments) are required to take the following Oath of Allegiance in favour of the Queen Elizabeth II, not for their mother-land, which reads:

"I (name) swear by Almighty God that I will be faithful and bear true allegiance to Her Majesty Queen Elizabeth, her heirs and successors, according to law. So help me God."

Similar Oath of Allegiance is also taken by the Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of the United Kingdom, all the judges , Chancellor of the High Court and all persons enlisted in the British Army and the Royal Marines. Further the confined people of Australia, Canada, New Zealand, Bermuda, Belize, Grenada, Bahamas, Barbados, North Ireland and others - in all the thirty countries, controlled by the Queen Elizabeth II are bound to take Oath of Allegiance in her favor.

Dr. Aftab Abro
Peacock Printers and Publishers
Karachi, Pakistan

CONTENTS

Preface by Ali Iqbal	13
Introduction	17
List of 30 Slave Nations under the British Monarchs	20
Divine Status of Queen Elizabeth II	35
Oath of Allegiance:	
Oath by the enslaved people of the United Kingdom	36
Oath by the British elected Parliamentarians	37
Oath by the British Judges	37
Oath by the British Armed forces	38
Oath by the Scottish Parliament	38
Oath by the Welsh Assembly	39
Oath by the enslaved people of Australia	39
Oath by the enslaved people of Canada	40
Oath by the enslaved people of New Zealand	41
Oath by the House of Representatives in New Zealand	41
Oath by the Armed forces in New Zealand	42
Oath by the Judiciary in New Zealand	42
Oath by the Police in New Zealand	42
HISTORY OF BRITAIN	43
Britain conquered by Rome	45
Roman Britain conquered by Anglo-Saxons	50
Anglo-Saxon England conquered by Viking Danes	54
Danish England conquered by	
Norman Invader William the Bastard	56
William II Rufus	58

Slave Nations Under British Monarchs

Henry I	61
Stephen of Blois	63
Henry II	65
Murder of Archbishop Becket	66
Ireland donated to England by the Pope	67
Great Rebellion of 1173 - 74	69
Richard I	71
John Lackland	77
Henry III	83
Edward I	87
Conquest of Wales	90
Conquest of Scotland	94
Edward II	100
Scotland liberated	101
Edward III	104
Richard II	112
Henry IV	117
Henry V	122
Henry VI	127
Edward IV	133
Richard III	135
Henry VII	137
Henry VIII	143
Wales annexed to England	150
Henry VIII invades Scotland	151
Edward VI	156
Queen Mary I	159
Queen Elizabeth I	165
James I	179
Charles I	185
Ireland declares Independence	195
Republic England	199
Protectorate England	207

Slave Nations Under British Monarchs

Richard Cromwell Lord Protector	210
Charles II	216
King James II	219
Mary II and William of Orange	226
Queen Anne	228
George I	231
George II	235
George III	244
George IV	247
William IV	248
Queen Victoria	255
Edward VII	257
George V	262
Edward VIII	260
George VI	265
Elizabeth II	267
Bibliography	273
Index	288

Preface

The Lesson No Historian Ever Taught

By Ali Iqbal

History simply defined is no more than the narration of what happened in the past, but the way it is presented automatically divides it into a number of varieties of its own. For example, there is Pre-history, Proto-history, Macro-history, Micro-history, Meta-history and so on. Not only this, to make it more comprehensible, more than one theories have also been invented which include, the Cyclic, the Circular, the Linear, the Religious, the Evolutionary, the Spengalarian, the Existentialist and the Logical Posivist.

However, most of the history books are written and read under the influence of Romantic Concept in which events are seen in terms of great leaders sent by Heaven to save and guide the troubled humanity.

But there is also a Dark Side of history which Voltaire calls, "the story of the world's crime", rather follies and misfortunes of mankind. In a lighter vein, Ambrose Bierce says: history is an account mostly false, of events mostly unimportant which are brought about by rulers, mostly knaves and soldiers mostly fools."

To be more precise, this is the history that tells us about the cruelties committed by kings and tyrants on people such as: cutting off noses, ears, tongues, fingers, hands, sex organs; taking out eyes; drawings, quartering of human bodies-disembowellings, be-headings, decapitations, executions, skinning, shootings and stabbings alive; crucifixions, hangings,

strangling to death- burnings alive; massacres and genocides- in short, where in murder is the easiest solution and human blood the cheapest item. All these barbarous and most savage acts were carried out by professional killers and hired assassins.

Will Durant some where says: it is war that makes the chief, the king and the state, just as is these that make war". In fact, war was invented by kings and rulers to carry out their dirty job of conquest. These horrible "royal" wars continued right up to 17th and 18th Centuries.

Some genius has divided wars into two categories: 'just' and 'unjust' because war have been fought also for protecting one's own land, one's own religion, one's own way of living, one's own women and children. But as Dryden has so rightly said: War is the trade of kings". It is their lust of power and desire to posses more and more land that drives them towards wars for which they had no moral ground. In some cases, these rulers needed only an 'excuse' for an attack just like the wolf in the story who ate lamb on the pretext of muddying the water. In fact, war was a past-time for them and they treated this "business of killing" most seriously. For them, war was another word for free lootings and raping of women.

Keep it also in mind that the notorious killers of the world including Attila the Hun, Genghis Khan, Ivan IV of Russia known as Ivan the Terrible-all of them were kings and emperors.

Monarchy - also called autocracy, monocracy and absolutism- was the most common and the most ancient form of government in which the son succeeded his father even if he happened to be an insane. If you were to look at the private lives of those royal personages, you will find most of them to be abnormal, homosexuals or bi-sexuals.

British monarchs and queens have their own imposing history which also reads as 'chronicles of crime. It began with Willium the Bastard, now known as Willium the Conquerer. His descendents included many Arthur's, Charleses, Edwards, Edmunds, Georges, James and Henrys, besides Annes,

Catherines, Jeans, Marys and Elizabeths. Theirs, is the history of murders, massacres, treacheries and illegitimate children.

A little earlier, in a wider sense, I was providing the reader a sort of back log from Yussouf Shaheen's book, 'Slaves Nations Under British Monarchs' which is full of amazing facts. Now I want the reader to know the man behind the book in a better manner.

Shaheen is well known, mostly as a journalist and a poet. But fewer people know that he has contributed more than half a dozen books on historical topics and yet he can not be called a conventional historian. Why! Because his book not only contains historical facts, they also raise ethical questions for the reader. In short, I would say that he is essentially and basically a moralist. He raises highly complicated moral issues while writing his own sort of micro-history.

The man under discussion has devoted his life to reading and writing of history but when he wants to impose moral principles on various great conquerors and logic or common sense on their misdeeds, he finds himself all alone in saying in what he has to say. His moral dilemma seems to be quite simple: If it is true that a killer of a single person is a killer, how can a killer of millions of people becomes a national hero?

British monarchy is a striking example of empire-building. It is not only quite extensive but it is also very powerful. How come the inheriter of this vast empire built on force, fraud and killings be accorded such an honour, what to speak of a Divine Status?

In 1952 when Elizabeth II became the Queen of England and the ruler of 64 countries, she must have been aware that all that she has inherited has no moral basis. Even today she rules over 30 countries. Does not her conscience prick her as to what she is doing? Shaheen reminds her, her past and appeals her that she should liberate the remaining countries from her yoke and pray for the rest of her life asking forgiveness from God for what her ancestors did.

Shaheen is really pained to see that no historian wants to see these so-called conquerors in their true colors. He also fails to understand why the descendents of these killers of yesterday should be addressed today as, the Most Honorable, My Lord and Right Honorable! He argues that not only all religions but also all secular governments promise justice to people. The world has no doubt traveled a long way but all the high ideals would remain mere ideals if subjugated people all over the world are set free.

The last book he is writing about is entitled: 'Treacherous Role of the Armies - Worldwide - Throughout Ages'. However, in view of his failing health, he is unsure about its completion. In this book, he express his hate for violence -violence in any form or for any purpose and shares the sentiments of Einstein who said somewhere long ago:

"This subject brings me to that vilest offspring of the herd mind- the odious militia. The man who enjoys marching in line and file to strains of music falls below my contempt; he received his great brain by mistake -the spinal cord would have been amply sufficient. This heroism at command, this senseless violence, this accursed bombast of patriotism - how intensely I despise them! War is low and despicable".

What more can I say except that Shaheen has spoken the truth. Not only this, to drive the point home, he has spoken the Whole Naked Truth. Let all of us wish him well ...

Introduction

Today, the family of William the Bastard – monarchs of the United Kingdom has a vast experience of over thousand years in warfare, invasions and conquests; they defeated immense nations all over the globe and proved themselves to be the greatest human hunters and enslavers in the history of mankind. They enslaved at a time one-fifth of the world's population,[1] occupied almost a quarter of the Earth's total land area and thereby established the largest empire in history.

The British monarchs betrayed the nations of the world in the name of 'trade', established the joint stock companies registered in London for conquest. The major crime of conquest began during the days of Queen Elizabeth I (1558 - 1603), who for the first time invited the business community of England to invest in the projects "colonization, loot and plunder" of the entire humanity.[2] Subsequently, many individuals and the Joint Stock Companies jumped into the field, they established the Charter Colonies, Proprietary Royal Colonies, Provincial Colonies and eventually enslaved hundreds of nations all along the four corners of the world by using a weapon: "fraud, force and famines." To control the defeated populations, 'famines' were created to suppress easily the defeated peoples.

Further, to terrorize and control the defeated nations they introduced the most severe and torturous punishments in the history of mankind - hanging, drawing and quartering. The punishment remained in practice for over six hundred years until 1870. The convicts were drawn by horse to the place of execution and then fastened to a hurdle or wooden panel, leaving the victim suspended in mid-air to cause strangulation

nearer to death. Those still alive at that point might have seen their male organs and entrails removed and burned.[3][4][5] Later their heart and head were cut and the body decapitated and quartered (chopped into four pieces). Their pierced heads were often displayed in prominent places across the country, mostly at London Bridge.[6] Convicted women were instead burned alive at the stake. Following such severe punishments the British monarchs eventually emerged as 'invincible' thereby enjoying one of the longest reigns in history.

The 16th, 17th and 18th centuries were the 'dark ages' for the humanity when the monarchs of Europe decided to flourish at the cost and resources of the other defeated nations; they continuously for four hundred years kept on invading, killing, looting and enslaving hundreds of nations of the world. Both the American continents were their main targets, killing 95% indigenous population of the Americas – the Red Indians. No laws or moral and religious bindings could restrain their criminal activities. Subsequently the European continent emerged as a 'Nursery of the Invaders, Conquerors and Terrorists' who in due course established many empires such as: the Portuguese Empire, Spanish Empire, French Empire, British Empire, Netherlands Dutch Empire, Denmark Danish Empire, Swedish Empire, Italian Empire, Norwegian Empire, German Empire, Belgian Empire, Tsar Empire and the Soviet Empire. During this long period, hundreds of the enslaved nations, time and again, struggled for independence but were ruthlessly crushed; they simply received dead bodies in millions along with the bodies of their heroes.

While carrying the dirty job of conquest, the European monarchs finally led their own 'home-land Europe' into two devastating World Wars, killing around 16 million soldiers and civilians mainly of Europe in the World War I and estimated 60 to 85 million soldiers and civilians in the World War II.[7][8][9] Europe was transformed into a continent of widows and orphans. Rape was a major problem all over Europe. It is strange, these

hardened criminals and professional human hunters are not still satisfied with the losses occurred during both the World Wars as they are again expanding military strength, manufacturing nuclear and other immense weapons of mass destruction so that they could eliminate Europe once again along with the entire humanity.

It is also strange, why the historians are not still prepared to condemn the conquests, system of kingship and the massacres and murders carried out by conquerors. On what ground such criminals and murderers are buried after death with full honours in great mausoleums, constructed with the looted wealth of the defeated nations. Why the United Nations is not prepared to condemn the system of kingship – the root cause of conquests and slavery in the world? They are the people who failed message of peace, brotherhood and justice repeatedly brought by all the religions of the world.

It was the King George VI of Great Britain (1936 – 1952), who surprisingly acknowledged his faith in the fundamental human rights. While addressing the first assembly of the United Nations held in London during January 1946, he proclaimed "our faith in the equal rights of men and women and of nations great and small".^[10] He was the first monarch in British history who decided to relieve all the nations enslaved by his forefathers. Subsequently in 1947, George himself relinquished the title of Emperor of India, divided the empire – British India into two parts as independent countries known as India and Pakistan. Similarly Burma was relieved in January 1948; Palestine was divided between Israel and the Arab states in May 1948 and Ireland divided and allowed to become a Republic in 1949. ^[11] After the death of George, his daughter and successor Queen Elizabeth II continued the policies of her great father and liberated at least 32 enslaved countries:^[12] Nigeria and Cyprus in 1960, Kuwait, Sierra Leone and Tanzania in 1961, Trinidad and Tobago and Uganda in 1962, Kenya in 1963, Malawi, Malta and Zambia in 1964, The Gambia and Maldives in 1965, Guyana,

Botswana and Lesotho in 1966, Yemen in 1967, Nauru and Mauritius in 1968, Swaziland in 1968, Tonga and Fiji in 1970, Sudan in 1956, Ghana and Malaysia in 1957, Bahrain, Qatar and United Arab Emirates in 1971, Seychelles in 1976, Dominica in 1978, Kiribati in 1979, Zimbabwe and Vanuatu in 1980 and Brunei in 1984. But the following thirty (30) nations are still under her servitude:

List of 30 Slave Nations under the British Monarchs:

(1) England - conquered in 1066 by William the Bastard since then ruled by his descendants. Queen Elizabeth II is the greatgrand daughter of William the Bastard. After the conquest, William confiscated over 95% land holdings in England transferred officially to the Norman warriors. The people revolted against William who in retaliation killed, massacred and starved to death half of the population of North England. William eventually created a new Norman Nobility in England later evolved into the House of Lords (House of Norman Invaders) continued from one generation to other. As a result, the descendant of William the Bastard and descendants of the Norman warriors remained occupant of England for over one thousand years, until this day. Land area of England: 130,279 km². Current population: 53,012,456 (2016 census).

(2) Scotland - made part of the United Kingdom through brutal methods. In 1091, William II Rufus compelled King Malcolm III of Scotland (1058 - 1093) to acknowledge his overlordship.^[13] Malcolm refused and he was killed along with his son at the Battle of Alnwick in Northumberland on November 13, 1093.

Later King Richard (1189 - 1199) sold Scotland to one of his subordinates William I against a sum of 10,000 marks and released him from his oath of subservience to Richard.^[15] Again

in 1209, another King of England John Lackland raided Scotland and demanded submission from its King William. Sixty-six years old King William did not dare to refuse, paid John 15,000 marks and surrendered two of his daughters as hostages.

In 1296, King Edward I of England invaded Scotland with a force of around 10,000 warriors, killed thousands of Scots, captured King John Balliol along with the 100 Scottish lords and knights after the Battle of Dunbar fought on April 27, 1296.^[15] King Balliol was kidnapped and confined in the Tower of London, leaving behind a devastated nation without a king. Under the circumstances, William Wallace a commoner, giant of a man, raised arms within less than a year, liberated Scotland in August 1297. In about seven years, William Wallace was taken as a prisoner to London and tried in Westminster Hall as a traitor on August, 23, 1305. He was severely whipped and dragged on a hurdle, then hanged, cut down whilst still alive and beheaded. After the death of William Wallace, one of his associates Robert de Bruce decisively defeated King Edward II of England, liberated Scotland after the Battle of Bannockburn fought on June 24, 1314.^[16] King Edward fled the battle field, leaving behind dead bodies of 11,000 British soldiers.

To resubjugate Scotland, King Henry VIII repeatedly invaded Scotland, imposed war known as the Battle of Solway Moss, fought on November 24, 1542 killed thousands of Scots, including a number of Earls and Lords of Scotland. After the defeat, young King James died a few weeks later aged 30, leaving behind a six-day-old daughter, Mary, Queen of Scots. ^[17] The Scots conveyed message to Henry VIII, "As long as a hundred of Scots remains alive, never the people of Scotland can be subjected on any condition to the lordship of England."

In a one more furious war with Henry VIII, known as the 'Battle of Flodden' fought on September 9, 1513, King James of Scotland was killed along with around 12,000 Scot soldiers including Alexander Stewars, Lord Chancellor of Scotland, and a great

number of the Scot Lords, Earls, Abbots, chieftains, noblemen and knights.[18][19] On October 21, 1513, the full Parliament of Scotland met at Stirling Castle where the 17-month-old child son of James IV was crowned as King James V.[20] Queen Elizabeth I (1558 – 1603) beheaded Queen Mary of Scotland on February 8, 1587.[21] She was a threat for Elizabeth, who wanted to convert the Scottish people to Anglicanism – the state religion of England. Since Queen Mary's father King James V of Scotland had married Margaret Tudor, sister of King Henry VIII of England, therefore Queen Mary's son James IV of Scotland was made King of England as James I, who merged Scotland with England on July 11, 1603 as a single kingdom, under one monarch and one parliament. James named the united monarchy as Great Britain and styled himself 'King of Great Britain.' After James I, the people of Scotland kept on resisting rigorously against the British bondage, fought many wars of independence at a great loss of human lives, but were enslaved time and again and annexed with England. The struggle for the independence of Scotland continued until this day, with the determination "As long as a hundred of Scots remains alive, never the people of Scotland can be subjected on any condition to the lordship of England." Land area of Scotland: 77,933 km². Current population: 5,327,700 (2016 estimate).

(3) Wales – a Celtic nation, forcibly made part of England. In 1097, William II Rufus son of William the Bastard subjugated Wales. The people of Wales resisted and refused to acknowledge lordship of the monarchs of England. In 1276, King Edward I of England again invaded Wales defeated and slain its ruler Llewellyn ap Gruffudd, after a fierce battle fought on December 11, 1282. His body was cut into four parts, "the right arm with a ring on the finger was sent for display to York; the left arm to Bristol; the right leg and hip to Northampton; the left leg to Hereford. His severed head was sent to London to be displayed on a pike over the gate to the Tower of London. By 1284 Edward

I effectively annexed Wales and made it a province of England. In 1301, the title "Prince of Wales" along with lands across North Wales was bestowed over Edward's eldest son, Prince Edward (later Edward II) – a title later granted to all first-born male heirs to the crown.

In 1402, Wales was liberated after a fierce 'Battle of Bryn Glas' fought on June 22, 1402. The battle was one of the greatest Welsh victories under Owain Glyndwr (c. 1359 – c. 1415) who emerged as a national hero. Once Wales declared independence, the Welsh students studying in the Oxford and Cambridge Universities leaving their studies returned to their mother-land. The Welsh laborers and craftsmen also abandon their employers in England and arrived in Wales. Owain Glyndwr convened the first Parliament of Wales at Machynlleth, where Glyndwr was proclaimed the Prince of Wales. In 1409, Henry's forces arrested Margaret, wife of Owain' - liberator of the Welsh nation along with two of his daughters (including Cathrine). They were imprisoned in the Tower of London, where all were to die before 1415. Nothing is recorded of Owain after 1412; he remained elusive, disappearing into the hills, dying around 1416. In his play, William Shakespeare portrays Owain Glyndwr as a wild, exotic, magical and spiritual man, playing up the romantic 'Celtic' traits. One of the most heroic figures in Welsh history, Owain acquired a mythical status, as the hero awaiting the call to return and liberate Welsh people.[22]

In 1536, King Henry VIII once again annexed Wales to England through military might, as 'conquered territory.' The Parliament of England passed an Act of 1536 which reads as under: "That the Country or Dominion of *Wales* shall be, stand and continue for ever from henceforth incorporated, united and annexed to and with this his Realm of *England*." [23] Subsequently Wales lost its freedom, national status and identity; Wales even lost its own language, law, legislature, culture and religious liberty. The Welsh people were compelled to relinquish Catholicism in favour of Anglicanism. As per the Acts, the law of England was

to be the only law of Wales and English was to become the only language of the courts of Wales. Those using the Welsh language were not to receive jobs in public offices in the territories of the king of England. Land area of Wales: 20,779 km². Current Population: 3,063,456 (2011 census).

(4) North Ireland - detached deceitfully from the main land of Ireland and made part of England in 1801. Land area: 14,130 km². Current population: 1,856,168 (2015 census).

(5) Australia - sixth-largest country in the world, enslaved by the British monarchs, comprising the mainland of the Australian continent, alongwith the island of Tasmania and numerous other islands. During the conquest and colonization, 95% Native population – aboriginals of Australia were killed, massacred and starved to death between 1788 and 1900.[24][25] Charles Darwin, 19th century British biologist and geologist, wrote during his visit to Australia, "Death pursues the Native in every place where the European sets foot." The Natives of Australia were attacked with modern weaponry and shot dead like dogs, infected with diseases; their girls and women were freely raped for over three hundred years and tens of thousands of Native children were snatched away from the bosoms of mothers to transform them into a White race. The kidnappings continued under the command of the British monarchs until 1970s. Physically Australia is the Second largest British colony in the World after Canada, labled fraudulently today as Commonwealth. Current Land area: 7,692,024 km² and population 24,294,057 (2016 estimate).

(6) New Zealand - Land of Maori Natives called 'Aotearoa' now a British Colony since 1840. On February 6, 1840, the indigenous populace of New Zealand was betrayed by the British agents of Queen Victoria. They fraudulently drafted a

Treaty of Waitangi, in which it was written that the Natives had ceded New Zealand to Queen Victoria. Over the draft signatures were taken from about 540 Maroi people, including 13 women and its copies were circulated around New Zealand. Later it was informed that the Natives had sold 95 per cent landholdings of New Zealand to the British colonist. Subsequently British sovereignty over all of New Zealand was claimed on May 21, 1840. By 1862 the Moriori Natives were wiped out, only 101 survived.[26] In 1907, King Edward VII proclaimed New Zealand a dominion within the British Empire. Currently Queen Elizabeth II is the Head of State, represented by a Governor-General. Land area: 268,021 km². Current population: 4,559,371 (June 2016 estimate).

(7) Canada - fraudulently called an independent nation with parliamentary system, originally a large group of colonies under the British monarchs since 1867. It is also a great graveyard, where many Native Aboriginal nations lie buried. Currently Queen Elizabeth II is the monarch of each of Canada's 10 provinces. She controls the land through her personal appointee, the Governor General.

The territories of Canada extend from the Atlantic to the Pacific and northward into the Arctic Ocean, covering 9.98 million square kilometers (3.85 million square miles), making it the world's second-largest country by total area and the fourth-largest country by land area.

In 1583, at the command of Queen Elizabeth I, Newfoundland was founded as the first North American British colony. Later in 1610, the British established additional colonies, including the Thirteen Colonies to the south, which revolted and emerged as the United States of America in 1776. Current population: 36,321,400 (2016 estimate).

(8) Jamaica - a British colony transformed into 'African country' over the soil of the Americas. Between 1494 and 1838 the indigenous populations 'Arawak and Taíno' of Jamaica (then called their mother-land 'Xaymaca') were annihilated jointly by the Spanish and British invaders. Subsequently the population gap was filled in by the Africans brought as slaves, now constitutes majority of the population of Jamaica. In 1655, England defeated the Spanish and conquered Jamaica, since then controlled by the British monarchs.[27] At present, Queen Elizabeth II is the head of state, ruling Jamaica through her personal appointee the Governor-General. Land area: 10,991 km². Current population: 2,802,340 (2016 census).

(9) Barbados - a British colony and an 'African country' in the Lesser Antilles, in the Americas, conquered by the British agents during 1625 in the name of King James I. Presently Queen Elizabeth II is head of state of Barbados - also referred as Little England. While annihilating its indigenous population - Taino Arawak speaking natives, the population gap was filled in by the convicts and indentured laborers from Ireland, Scotland and England. Several thousands of Irish people were sold as slaves by the English merchants in Barbados. In 1643, there were 37,200 Whites in Barbados (86% of the population) later replaced by the Africans, Chinese, Indians (mostly from Gujrat) and others.[28] Land area: 439 km². Current population: 285,051 (2016 census).

(10) The Bahamas - an 'African country' in the Americas, nearly 91% of its population are descendants of slaves and free Africans. It consists of more than 700 islands. Between 1513 - 1648 the indigenous population 'Lucayan' - a Taino people were forcibly uprooted from their land, shifted to Hispaniola by the Spanish authorities and sold there as slaves, finally to be annihilated completely. The empty land was occupied by the British colonists from Bermuda. In 1670 King Charles II of

England gifted the islands to the Lords Proprietors of the Carolinas in North America. They obtained rights from the king of trading, tax, appointing governors and administering the country. Subsequently it was transformed into a 'Pirates' Republic." In 1718, the Bahamas became a British Crown colony. Today it is not an independent Commonwealth realm, but a colony under the British monarchs currently controlled by Queen Elizabeth II.^[29] Land area: 13,878 km². Current population: 393,024 (2016 estimate).

(11) Grenada - an 'African country' over the soil of the Americas, 82% of its population are the descendants of the African slaves brought by the English and French slave traders. During the process, the indigenous Carib and Arawak populations of Grenada were annihilated. In 1877 Grenada was made a British Crown colony. A small percentage of descendants of indentured workers from India were brought to Grenada mainly from the North Indian states of Bihar and Uttar Pradesh in between 1857 - 1885.^[30] Today, the Indian descent comprises the second largest ethnic group. It is not correct that independence was granted to Grenada on February 7, 1974, it is still a colony controlled by the Queen Elizabeth II of the United Kingdom who is also the Head of State. Land area 348.5 km. Current population: 106,000 (2016 estimate).

(12) Saint Lucia - a British colony in the eastern Caribbean Sea, situated on the boundary with the Atlantic Ocean. French and British raiders ruled this land for 14 times, between 1550 to 1814 when British finally took definitive control of the island. During their raids, the indigenous Carib population of Saint Lucia was annihilated. It is fraudulently called a sovereign country as it is controlled by the British Queen Elizabeth II who is its Head of State. Land area: 617 km². Current population: 186,164 (2016 estimate).

(13) Jersey – the largest of the Channel Islands off the coast of Normandy, France – personal property of the British Crown, now owned by the Queen Elizabeth II of the United Kingdom, conquered in 1066. Land area: 118.2 km² Population: 99,500 (2016 census).

(14) Saint Helena – Second-oldest British Overseas Territory after Bermuda situated outside North America and the Caribbean in the South Atlantic Ocean. After the Dutch, Portuguese and Spanish colonists, the British East India Company arrived in the garb of trade during 1657 to colonise the island and enslave its people. The Company renamed the town 'Jamestown' and James Fort, in honour of the King James II of England. In 1815, the British authorities selected Saint Helena as the place of detention for Napoleon Bonaparte,^[31] who died there on May 5, 1821. In 1833, the dirty job of the East India Company was over, subsequently Saint Helena was made a crown colony to be controlled by the British monarchs. Today Saint Helena is governed by the British Queen Elizabeth II through her personal appointee the Governor.. Land area: 16 by 8 kilometres. Population: 3,994 (2016 census).

(15) Isle of Man – purchased property of the Crown, Head of the Island, Queen Elizabeth II, who holds the title of Lord of Mann and Lord of Mann is represented by a Lieutenant Governor. The Isle of Man was purchased from the Dukes of Atholl (an ancient Scottish family) on May 10, 1765 against a sum of: £70,000 initially for its feudal rights. Later, on June 10, 1825, John Duke of Atholl sold rest of the previliges and sovereignty over the island against a sum of £417,144 thereby the monarch of Great Britain became its owners and gained effectively control of the island as well as its populace. The Isle of Man is located in the middle of the northern Irish Sea and has an area of around 572 square kilometers. Population: 88,319 (2016 census).

(16) Saint Vincent and the Grenadines - land of the Carib Natives, now an 'African country' over the American soil with 66% population of the descendants of African people brought here as slaves. The island is also known as Saint Vincent, originally named Youloumain by its Natives - Caribs, who called themselves Carina or Garifuna.[32] The Natives were displaced, exiled, killed and finally eliminated by the British mercenaries after the three fierce Carib Wars fought in 1769, 1783 and 1796. Subsequently the population gap was filled in mostly by the African slaves. In 1877, the land became a British Crown Colony. To bluff the people of this land, a 'referendum' was held on November 25, 2009, in which the 'selective voters' were asked whether they want freedom and make their country a republic or not. A two-thirds majority was required, and it was defeated by 29,019 votes (55.64 per cent) to 22,493 (43.13 per cent). Subsequently British Queen Elizabeth II continued to control this country through her personal appointee the Governor-General. Land area: 389 km². Current population: 109,451 (2016 estimate).

(17) Belize - in Central America, land of the Maya Civilization that flourished at least three millennia ago in the Yucatan Peninsula and the highlands to the south, in what is now Belize, Mexico, Guatemala and western Honduras. The Spanish conquistadors invaded the land, annihilated most of its population and declared it a Spanish colony in the 16th century. Later in the 17th and 18th centuries it was occupied by the English and Scottish pirates known as the Baymen. They introduced the system of 'slavery' in Belize, raided, kidnapped and sold the Mayan men, women and children as slaves in Jamaica, even as far away as Virginia and the Carolinas. The Baymen were fully patronized by the British monarchs in their criminal and dirty job. In 1836, the British claimed the right to administer the region. In 1862, Great Britain formally declared it a British Crown Colony, named it British Honduras.[33] In the

late 19th century, a British Company 'Belize Estate and Produce Company' acquired half of all the privately held land in the colony. On June 1, 1973 British Honduras was officially renamed Belize. On September 21, 1981 a misleading announcement was made that Belize was granted independence, whilst in actuality the British Queen Elizabeth II holds the title Queen of Belize. She controls the land through her personal appointee - the Governor-General. Land area: 22,966 km². Current population: 366,024 (2016 estimate).

(18) Antigua and Barbuda - twin Island 'African country' over the American soil consisting 91% population of Black Africans brought here as slaves during the seventeenth century. The land was occupied by the English settlers in between 1632 - 1684 by annihilating its indigenous Carib populace. Since last four centuries both the islands are under the servitude of the British monarchs. Currently Elizabeth II of the United Kingdom is the Queen and Head of State of Antigua and Barbuda, controls the island country through her personal appointee the Governor-General. Land area: 440 km². Current population: 91,800 (2016 estimate).

(19) Saint Kitts and Nevis - a two-island 'African country' over the American soil, situated in the West Indies, with 75.1% African population, descendants of those Africans, who were brought here as slaves. While occupying this land, the Spanish, British and French colonists enslaved, expelled and finally made genocide of Kalinago, Caribs indigenous population of Saint Kitts and Nevis. In 1714, the French ceded the territory to Britain. Now Saint Kitts and Nevis is a British colony controlled by Elizabeth II, Queen of the United Kingdom. She is the Head of State represented in the country by a Governor-General. Land area: 261 km². Current population: 56,086 (2016 estimate).

(20) South Georgia and the South Sandwich

Islands - a British Overseas Territory in the southern Atlantic Ocean, occupied for the monarchs of Britain: South Georgia in 1775 and the South Sandwich Islands in 1908. In both the islands, there are no indigenous population and currently no permanent population, only British soldiers and officials. Argentina had a claim over islands, subsequently invaded and occupied the Falkland Islands, South Georgia and the South Sandwich Islands on April 2, 1982 resulting in a Falklands War on the same day. The war lasted for 74 days and ended with the Argentine surrender on June 14, 1982, returning the islands to British control. In the war Argentine lost 649 military personnel, British 255 and the Falkland Islanders three. The executive power of both the islands is vested in the monarch of the United Kingdom currently Elizabeth II and is exercised by a Commissioner. Land area: 3,903 km². Current population: 30 (2016 estimate).

(21) Falkland Islands (East Falkland, West Falkland and 776 other islands) - a British Overseas Territory in the South Atlantic Ocean, claimed also by Argentina. At various stages, the islands remained target of the French, British and Spanish colonists. In 1765 the islands were claimed for King George III of England. In 1840, the Falklands became a British Crown colony.^[34] In April 1982, Argentine forces invaded and occupied the islands but surrendered two months later as a result of the Falklands War. Currently the Queen Elizabeth II of the United Kingdom is the Head of State of the islands and executive authority is exercised on her behalf by the Governor. The islands territory based in the Americas is fraudulently claimed as part of the European Union. Further to bluff the entire world, a referendum for the independence of the Falkland Islands was held by Britain in March 2013 that was declared 'failed' as the 99.8 percent of voters (total population 2,932 in 2012) favored to

remain under the British rule. Land area: 12,200 km². Current population: 2,911 (2016 estimate).

(22) Anguilla - a British Overseas Territory and an 'African country' in the Caribbean that was conquered in 1650. Its 'Arawak' indigenous population was annihilated and replaced by the Africans from Senegal and other areas brought as slaves. The 90.08% population of Anguilla is black (2001 census) - descendants of the African slaves. In 1967, after a long subjugation of about four centuries, the island declared independence and emerged as a "Republic of Anguilla" but the British authorities again invaded, occupied and brought back the land under their chain of slavery on February 7, 1969. Today, the British Queen Elizabeth II is the Head of State and controls the land through her personal appointee - the Governor. Land area 91 km. Current population 14,960 (2016 estimate).

(23) The British Virgin Islands - a British Overseas Territory and an 'African country' in the Caribbean with 83.4% African population, descendants of the Africans brought here as slaves. The indigenous populace - Caribs were annihilated after whom the Caribbean Sea is named. The islands were claimed by the Spanish, Dutch, French, and finally enslaved by Britain in 1680. It is more or less a personal property of the British monarchs, currently controlled by the Queen Elizabeth II of the United Kingdom, through her appointee the governor. Land area: 153 km². Current population: 30,547 (2016 census).

(24) The Cayman Islands - a British Overseas Territory located in the western Caribbean Sea, occupied by Britain since 1670.^[35] For the last over three centuries the Cayman Islands physically had remained a personal property of the British monarchs. Currently are controlled by the Queen Elizabeth II of the United Kingdom, through her appointee the Governor. Land area: 264 km². Current population: 56,732 (2016 census).

(25) Montserrat - a British Colony in the Caribbean island, since 1667, now called the British Overseas Territory. After annihilating the Caribs - indigenous population of the island, Africans were replaced as slaves, followed by the Irish nationals to work as indentured servants. During the reign of Oliver Cromwell, some 60,000 Irish were forced to settle in the Montserrat Island. On March 17, 1768, the inhabitants of the island rebelled but failed to achieve independence.^[36] From 1667, until this day, the monarchs of England are virtually the owners of this island, presently controlled by the Queen Elizabeth II of the United Kingdom, through her appointee the Governor. Land area: 102 km². Current population: 4,900 (2016 estimate).

(26) Bermuda - the oldest British Overseas Territory in the North Atlantic Ocean that was made a Crown Colony in 1684 under King Charles II of England, maneuvered by the English Virginia Company. After a long period of over three centuries, the land is still under the servitude of the British monarchs - great enslaver in the history of mankind, currently controlled by the Queen Elizabeth II, through her appointee the Governor. Land area: 53.2 km². Current population: 64,237 (2016 census).

(27) The Turks and Caicos Islands - an African country over the American soil, located in the Caribbean Sea and northern Caribbean region with 88% African population, descending those Africans who were brought here as slave after killing the indigenous Tainos people. Today, the land is branded as the British Overseas Territory, occupied by the British monarchs since 1799 and currently are controlled by the British Queen Elizabeth II through her appointee the Governor. Land area: 616.3 km². Population: 49,000 (2012 census). Land area: 616.3 km². Current population: 49,000 (2016 census).

(28) Solomon Islands - enslaved by the British monarchs since 1893, consisting of six major islands and over 900 smaller islands in Oceania lying to the east of Papua New Guinea and northwest of Vanuatu. The British monarchs continued to rule this land until this day. On July 7, 1978 it was fraudulently announced that the Solomon Islands had achieved independence whilst the British Queen Elizabeth II is still the Queen and Head of State, controls the Solomon Islands through her Governor-General.^[37] Land area: 28,400 km². Current population: 523,000 (2016 estimate).

(29) Tuvalu - a Polynesian island nation located in the Pacific Ocean, midway between Hawaii and Australia, enslaved by the British monarchs since 1892. On October 1, 1978 a misleading announcement was made by the British authorities that Tuvalu had become a fully independent country whilst the Queen Elizabeth II is the Queen and Head of State of Tuvalu until this day and she controls the land through her appointee the Governor-General. Land area: 26 square kilometers; population: 10,837 (2016 census).

(30) Papua New Guinea - in spite of the repeated efforts since 1884, Papua New Guinea could not get rid of the British monarchs.^[38] Currently Queen Elizabeth II acts as its Sovereign and Head of State, represented by the Governor-General. It is an Oceania country that occupies the eastern half of the island of New Guinea and its offshore islands in Melanesia, a region of the southwestern Pacific Ocean north of Australia. The natives of Papua also had appealed to the United Nations for independence. Land area 462,840 km²; Current population: 7,756,002 (2016 census preliminary estimate).

The total world land area is currently held by Queen Elizabeth II of the United Kingdom: 148,940,000 kilometers or 7.94 % of the world land area.

Total World Population under the servitude of Queen Elizabeth II: 7,420,022,677.

Divine Status of Queen Elizabeth II

The Queen Elizabeth II is deemed the "Fount of Justice, the Fount of Honour and the source of all Dignities. The Queen is above the law who "cannot do any wrong" (probably has fallen from the Heaven) and she cannot be prosecuted for criminal offences. She is also above any civil action. She appears on postage stamps, coins and banknotes.

Queen Elizabeth II is Commander-in Chief of the Armed Forces (the Royal Navy, the British Army and the Royal Air Force) and enjoys the power to commission and decommission officers as well as organize and direct military operations. The Queen has the power to appoint and remove government ministers, members of the House of Lords and senior judges. It is the Queen's right to grant assent to bills from Parliament, signing them into law, whilst she could decide to refuse assent. Only the Queen is authorized for appointing a new Prime Minister. The Prime Minister takes office by attending the Monarch in private audience, and after "kissing hands" that appointment is immediately effective without any other formality or instrument.[39] Later the Queen holds a weekly audience with the Prime Minister. No records of these audiences are taken and the proceedings remain fully confidential. (the prime minister appears as a slave appears before his master every week to take directives). The Queen has the power to dismiss a Prime Minister. It is also the prerogative of the Queen to summon and prorogue Parliament. If it is asked to dissolve Parliament to call an early election, the Queen could refuse. The Queen also

appoints the First Minister of Scotland and First Minister of Wales. The Queen can veto any law passed by the Northern Ireland Assembly.

The Queen Elizabeth II is the Supreme Governor of the established Church of England, in contrast with the Pope of the Roman Catholic Church. Archbishops, Lord High Commissioner to the Church's General Assembly and all bishops are appointed by the Queen.

The Crown creates all Peerages, mostly members of the Royal Family (so-called as Lord X, the Most Honourable, the Right Honourable): Duke, Marquess, Earl, Viscount and Baron - all addressed as 'Lord X'. The Queen alone appoints members of the Order of the Garter, the Order of the Thistle, the Royal Victorian Order and the Order of Merit.

Oath of Allegiance

Since 1215, the enslaved people of England, Scotland and Wales are required to show their true allegiance to the invading Norman family, descendants of William the Bastard. The current oath of allegiance is set out from the Promissory Oaths Act 1868:[40]

Oath of Allegiance by the enslaved People of the United Kingdom:

"I (name) swear by Almighty God that I will be faithful and bear true allegiance to Her Majesty Queen Elizabeth, her heirs and successors, according to law. So help me God." [40]

The Oath of Allegiance is made by each of the following office-holders: First Lord of the Treasury, Second Lord of the Treasury, Lord Chancellor, Lord President of the Council, Lord Privy Seal, Secretaries of State, President of the Board of Trade, Lord Steward, Lord Chamberlain, Earl Marshal, Master of the Horse, Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster, Paymaster General, First

Minister of Scotland, Keeper of the Privy Seal of Scotland, Lord Clerk Register, Advocate General for Scotland, Lord Justice Clerk, First Minister of Wales and others.

Oath by the British elected Parliamentarians:

Under the Parliamentary Oaths Act 1866, elected members of both Houses of Parliament are required to take an Oath declaring their personal allegiance to Queen Elizabeth II. It is highly insulting rather a criminal act on the part of the Queen for asking allegiance from a person who owes his allegiance to the people. Until the oath is taken, an MP may not receive a salary, take his seat, speak in debates, or vote. The usual wording of the oath is:

I... swear by Almighty God that I will be faithful and bear true allegiance to Her Majesty Queen Elizabeth, her heirs and successors, according to law. So help me God.[41]

Oath of allegiance by the British Judges:

The Lord Chief Justice, Master of the Rolls, President of the Queen's Bench Division, President of the Family Division and the Chancellor of the High Court. Judges are required by various statutes to take two oaths:

First Judicial Oath:

I... do swear by Almighty God that I will be faithful and bear true allegiance to Her Majesty Queen Elizabeth the Second, her heirs and successors, according to law. So help me God.

Second Judicial Oath:

I... do swear by Almighty God that I will well and truly serve our Sovereign Lady Queen Elizabeth the Second in the office of..., and I will do right to all manners of people after the laws and usages of this realm, without fear or favour, affection or ill will. So help me God.

Oath by the British Armed forces

All persons enlisted in the British Army and the Royal Marines are required by the Army Act 1955 to attest to the following oath or equivalent affirmation:[42]

I... swear by Almighty God that I will be faithful and bear true allegiance to Her Majesty Queen Elizabeth II, Her Heirs and Successors, and that I will, as in duty bound, honestly and faithfully defend Her Majesty, Her Heirs and Successors, in Person, Crown and Dignity against all enemies, and will observe and obey all orders of Her Majesty, Her Heirs and Successors, and of the generals and officers set over me. (It may be pointed out that this oath clearly depicts the Armed Forces as the personal servants rather slaves of the Queen and her descendants. The most shocking thing is that no where the 'people' are mentioned.

Oath by the Scottish Parliament

Section 84 of the Scotland Act 1998 requires for the democratically elected Members of the Scottish Parliament to swear allegiance to the Queen Elizabeth II.[43] Members of the Scottish Executive and junior Scottish Ministers are additionally required to take similar Oath, which is highly insulting rather a

criminal act on the part of the Queen for asking allegiance from a person whose owe his allegiance to the people.

"I ..., do swear that I will be faithful and bear true allegiance to Her Majesty Queen Elizabeth, Her Heirs and Successors, according to Law. So help me God."
(It is highly insulting rather a criminal act on the part of the Queen for asking allegiance from a person who owes his allegiance to the people).

Members of the Scottish Parliament must take the oath within 2 months of being elected, failing which they cease to be members and their seats are declared vacated.

Oath by the Welsh Assembly

Section 20 of the Government of Wales Act 1998 requires members of the National Assembly for Wales to take the oath of allegiance to the Queen Elizabeth II. [44]

Oath by the enslaved people of Australia

In Australia, the executive power of the Land is vested in the Queen (by virtue of conquest - a foreigner) as Head of State and is exercisable by the Governor-General as the Queen's personal representative. The Governor-General of Australia is appointed by the Queen, mostly a British citizen, serving at Her Majesty's pleasure and maintains direct contact with her. On behalf of the Queen, Governor General is Commander-in-Chief of the Australian Defence Force, both Naval and Military, acting by and with the Advice of the Privy Council – the Queens's most loyal body, based at London. On behalf of the Queen, the governor-general – again a foreigner is authorized to appoint (or dismiss) ministers, federal judges, ambassadors and high commissioners, giving royal assent to legislation passed by the Parliament, issuing writs for election and bestowing Australian honours. The governor general presides over the Federal Executive Council, holds the power to dismiss the prime

minister, annul the legislation, dissolve (or refuse to dissolve) the House of Representatives. When travelling abroad, the governor-general is seen as the representative of Australia, and of the Queen of Australia, so is treated as a Head of State. In 1975, the Australian Prime Minister, Gough Whitlam was dismissed from his post by Governor General Sir John Kerr. [45] Similar is the position of the Governor General of Canada. (The role of the Prime Minister of Australia is a fictitious one; he seems to be the personal servant of the Governor-General).

Oath by the enslaved people of Canada

In Canada, more or less the entire Candanian Nation under servitude of the Queen Elizabeth II is bound to take the ‘Oath of Allegiance’ before the Governor General or some Person authorized by him. They include members of the Senate, members of Parliament, Justice of the Supreme Court, Justice of the Federal Court, Canadian Armed Forces, Police forces, federal and provincial government offices, Mayors and municipal councilors. This Oath of Allegiance is similar taken by the members of parliament in the United Kingdom:[46]

“[name], do swear that I will be faithful and bear true allegiance to Her Majesty Queen Elizabeth the Second (a foreigner), Queen of Canada, Her Heirs and Successors (either insane or disable). So help me God.”

Though monarchs retain all executive, legislative and judicial power in and over Canada, the governor general is permitted to exercise most of those powers in the sovereign's name; some as outlined in the Constitution Act, 1867, and some through various letters patent issued over decades. Amongst other duties, however, the governor general may appoint Supreme Court Justices, persons to the Queen's Privy Council, Canada, the lieutenant governors of the provinces, Senators, the Speaker of the Senate, Supreme Court justices and superior and county

court judges in each province. The governor general alone is also mandated to summon parliament. As the personal representative of the monarch, the governor general serves as the Chancellor and Principal Companion of the Order of Canada, the Chancellor of the Order of Military Merit and the Chancellor of the Order of Merit of the Police Force. As Commander in-Chief, the governor general is further routinely granted the Canadian Forces Decoration by the Chief of the Defence Staff on behalf of the monarch.

Oath by the enslaved people of New Zealand

In New Zealand, the entire Nation under servitude of the monarchs of England is required to take following Oath of Allegiance:^[47]

"I, (name) swear that I will be faithful and bear true allegiance to Her Majesty Queen Elizabeth the Second (a foreigner), Her heirs and successors (either mad or disable), according to law. So help me God."

Oath by the House of Representatives in New Zealand

Before being permitted to sit or vote in the House of Representatives, members of Parliament must take the Oath of Allegiance:

"I, (name), swear that I will well and truly serve Her Majesty Queen Elizabeth the Second (a foreigner and conqueror of our land), Her heirs and successors (either mad or disable), according to law. So help me God.

Oath by the Armed forces in New Zealand

"I, (name), solemnly promise and swear that I will be faithful and bear true allegiance to our Sovereign Lady the Queen, Her heirs and successors ... and that I will loyally observe and obey 'all orders' of Her Majesty (conqueror of our land), Her heirs and successors and the officers set over me ... so help me God."

Oath by the Judiciary in New Zealand

I, [name], swear that I will well and truly serve Her Majesty Queen Elizabeth the Second, Her heirs and successors (not the people), according to law, in the office of ...; So help me God."

Oath by the Police in New Zealand

I, [name], swear that I will faithfully and diligently serve Her Majesty Queen Elizabeth Second of New Zealand, her (or his) heirs and successors, without favour or affection, malice or ill-will ... So help me God."

HISTORY OF BRITAIN

Britain conquered by Rome

43 – 410 AD

In 55 BC, the most notorious Roman general Julius Caesar, Conqueror of Gaul (modern-day France, Germany west of the Rhine, Belgium, Holland and portions of Switzerland), invaded Britain twice - the present-day England - land of iron, lead, zinc, copper, silver and gold. During his first invasion, Caesar could gain only a foothold on the southeast areas of Kent and the lower Thames. He looted many Native Celtic nations and forced them to pay tribute. On his return to Rome, Caesar took with him a huge amount in silver along with many young male and females as hostages. The Roman Senate declared a 20-day public holiday in Rome to celebrate Caesars' achievements over the Britons.

Again in 54 BC, Caesar invaded England with a total of 800 ships and 2000 cavalry troops, plus horses and a large baggage train. He also brought an elephant-probably the first ever to be seen in Britain.[48] The Britons immediately united against the invader under Cassivellaunus, chieftain of the Catuvellauni Celtic tribe settled on the north side of the River Thames. In the meantime five of the British tribes, the Cenimagni, the Segontiaci, the Ancalites, the Bibroci and the Cassi, made their surrender before Caesar. But Cassivellaunus refused to bow before the Romans, landed in the battle ground with a force of four thousand horse-drawn chariots, an antiquated fighting method not used by the Roman military. After several battles, Caesar surrendered and agreed to vacate Britannia against a 'ransom' of three thousand pounds of silver that was paid by the chief Cassivellaunus. When Caesar returned to Rome, the Senate was disappointed and desperate over the Caesars' failure in Britain. After Caesar,

no Roman could dare to land in Britannia continuously for another 97 years.

In 43 AD, the Roman Emperor Claudius (41 - 54 AD), sent his troops led by Aulus Plautius that landed in Kent. He was confronted by the Native chieftens Caratacus and Togodumnus of the Catuvellauni Celtic tribe. At the time, the Catuvellauni tribe held sway over most of the southeastern part of England. During two battles fought at the Medway and the Thames, Togodumnus was killed and Caratacus fled to Wales. In the midst of war, Emperor Claudius arrived in England and brought with him war elephants and heavy auxiliaries, continued further conquest of the major parts of England, finally declared it a new province of Rome, named it Britannia - after the Celtic goddess, Britannia - in whose honour coins were minted, bearing her figure.

Camulodunum (modern Colchester in Essex) - former capital of the Celtic tribe was made as the first Roman capital, situated at 53 miles north-east of the modern London and Aulus Plautius became the first Roman governor of Britannia. Claudius's arch says, "Plautius received the surrender of eleven kings (tribal chiefs) of South East Britain without any loss." At the other side, *The Twelve Caesars* - a primary source on Roman history recorded that Claudius received the surrender of the Britons without battle or bloodshed. However, after 16 days of stay in Britain, Claudius returned to Rome, where the Roman Senate granted him the title of 'Britannicus' and authorized him to celebrate a triumph through out the city.

Thereafter the Romans prepared to move further west and north. Late in 47 AD, more territory was conquered and the future Roman emperor Vespasian led a campaign into the Southwest where he defeated two more tribes. By 54 AD, Romans were moving towards Northern England and Wales.

In the meantime, the defeated people of Britain were ordained to worship the Roman gods including Emperor Claudius, who was raised after death as one of the supreme gods, by the Senate of Rome. Prior to Claudius, the Army commander Julius Caesar, Emperor Augustus and Caligula – all were officially declared gods by the Roman Senate. Julius Caesar had claimed his descent from the goddess Venus and the Roman Senate declared him “unconquered god” honored equally with the Supreme Roman gods Jupiter and Mars. His statues were built and the coins were issued with his portrait. Julius Caesar was also called *parens patriae* (father of the Roman Nation); legal oaths were taken by his Genius; his birthday was made a public festival; the month Quinctilis was renamed July, in his honor. [49]

Likewise another army commander Octavius (63 BC – 14 AD), later called Augustus was proclaimed a god immediately after his death by the Roman Senate. Augustus, one of the Roman commanders revolted against the Roman Senate, killed 300 Senators and 2,000 political opponents raised a new Roman Senate that conferred on him the title Augustus – ‘exalted one’, in 27 BC. This title “Augustus” became permanent title of the future rulers of the Roman Empire.[50]

By 2 BC, Augustus was declared Pater Patriae – Father of the Roman World. He was also considered “god Romulus” (presumed founder of Rome) and “son of god Julius Caesar”. The month of August (Latin: *Augustus*) was named in his honor. Accordingly, the defeated nations under Rome were commanded at the pain of death to worship the Roman gods. Nevertheless, the Roman subjects and slaves were allowed to worship freely their own gods or goddesses along with the Roman gods. In 14 AD, the body of Augustus was cremated after his death and his ashes interred in a great mausoleum. Statues of Augustus were erected all over the Roman Empire for worshipping him as a “deliverer” or “saviour.”

Augustus was succeeded by his step-son Tiberius, for whom it is mentioned in the Gospels that during Tiberius' reign, Jesus of Nazareth was crucified under the authority of Pontius Pilate, governor of the Roman Judaea Province.

Tiberius was succeeded by Caligula (r. AD 37 - 41), who was nephew and an adopted son of Tiberius. He immediately claimed to be a living god, equivalent to the greatest Roman god Jupiter. He ordered a bridge to be built between his palace and the Temple of Jupiter so that he could have consultations with the god Jupiter. The Roman subjects as well as the Senators were pressurized to worship him as "*Neos Helios*," the "New Sun god." Two temples "Castor and Pollux" were erected in Rome for his worship. Caligula ordered to remove the heads from various statues of the great Roman gods and replaced them with his own. He even ordered the erection of his life size statue in the Jewish Temple of Jerusalem for worship. As a result, the Jewish people revolted against the Romans. Finally, Caligula was murdered on January 22, 41 by the Praetorian Guard. He was stabbed 30 times. Even his wife Caesonia was killed along with his daughter Julia Drusilla,^[51] whose head was smashed against a wall. Caligula was replaced by Claudius, nephew of Caligula, who also emerged as a new god of Rome and a large Temple of Claudius was constructed on the Caelian Hill that covered the entire hilltop.

In Britannia, its people refused to worship the so-called "Divine Claudius" - invader and conqueror of this land, in whose honor a huge Temple was reserved for his worship at Camulodunum (modern Colchester). In due course, at least seven more Temples, two theatres and many fortresses were built all over Britannia. To control the situation, the Romans prohibited the subject populations of Britannia, Celt in majority not to keep weapons, contrary to the Celtic law and custom.

When the Roman procurator, Decianus Catus confiscated land and property of the Iceni Celtic tribe of East Anglia in southern

Britannia, ruled by their chieftain Boudicca - she revolted and raised arms against the Romans.

Boudicca (in Celtic, 'Victory') challenged the mighty Rome and approached personally in her chariot along with her daughters to most of the Native nations for rising against the Romans for the sake of freedom. She said, "we must refuse to live in slavery; we must keep our land free and safe for our daughters, sisters and sons; let us fight jointly against the invaders; let us win the battle or perish, cried the formidable lady." Eventually she was successful in gathering around 230,000 Native warriors, as reported by the Roman historian Cassius Dio (c. AD 155-235), whose History of Rome is recorded in 80 volumes.

Boudicca, firstly liberated the capital city Camulodunum, former capital of the Catuvellauni Celtic nation, defeated 2,000 Roman infantry, brought by Quintus Petilius Cerialis, who escaped to Londinium (London).^[52] The bronze head of a statue of Claudius was decapitated and thrown in the River Alde in Suffolk. Later the forces of Boudicca moved towards Londinium (London) - then a twenty-years-old small town and a Roman settlement near the Thames River, for shipping and personnel supplies to and from Rome. It possessed a few buildings, government offices, warehouses and some residential houses. Before the arrival of Boudicca, the town Londinium was evacuated and abandoned by the Roman army. Subsequently it was sacked and burned along with the town of Verulamium (St. Albans).

Under the circumstances, a new Roman governor Caius Suetonius Paullinus was appointed for Britannia who landed with around 10,000 Roman auxiliaries. Finally there was a fierce war fought at the outskirts of Manduessedum (Mancetter) in which the Icenii Celts and the Trinovantes forces were almost annihilated.

In the war, Tacitus - the most important Roman historian of this period, recorded that 80,000 Britons, men, women and children

were killed. The Roman losses amounted to 400 dead with a slightly larger number wounded. Boudicca was captured, flogged publicly, gang-raped by the Romans along with her two minor daughters aged 9 and 11, leaving them naked and tied up to the ground.[53] The historian Cassius Dio wrote, "The Britons mourned her deeply and gave her a costly burial." Subsequently, the people of Britannia remained enslaved under the Rome continuously for about three hundred sixty seven years (43 AD - 410 AD).

Roman Britain Conquered by Anglo-Saxons 455 - 978 AD

After a long period of 367 years, the Roman bondage ended when the Roman Emperor Honorius on his own withdrew his forces from Britain in 410 with an advice to the British citizens to look after their own defence.

These were the days when Constantine III, a Roman general declared himself as emperor in Britannia during 407, also conquered Roman Gaul, Germania and Hispania, made Arles as capital of his new empire. At the time, the Roman Emperor Honorius was helpless before the Gothic tribes who had besieged Ravenna, new capital of the Western Roman Empire. Under the circumstances, Honorius reluctantly recognized Constantine as co-emperor in 409. Meanwhile, Constantine III appointed his eldest son Constans as co-emperor of Hispania.[54][55]

In 411, while invading Italy, Constantine III was captured and beheaded, probably in September 411 along with his son Constantius by Constantius – a new Roman general dispatched by the Roman emperor Honorius.

This was the time, when Saxon pirates began raiding Britain and treacherously slew all its leaders except Vortigern who paid ransom for his life. The Britons, along with the people of Armorica, (Britany and Normandy) expelled the Constantine' officials and selected Vortigern as the new King of Britannia (c. 425 - 455 AD) who had already served under Constantine III. For Vortigern the foremost priority was to make security arrangements to protect his kingdom against the invading Picts and Scotti who had already occupied, what is now Scotland.

Vortigern decided to hire the invading Saxons as mercenaries – mostly fierce, impious, destructive and barbaric people. Such a precedent was already set up by the Romans for hiring mercenaries to fight off the invaders. Initially a small group of Saxons arrived in three war ships from Scandinavia and northern Germany and settled in Kent. Later they invited more of their countrymen to join them. Subsequently further gangs of Anglo-Saxons, the Jutes, along with Frisians, sailed across the North Sea to raid and eventually colonize Britain.

According to the 6th century historian Gildas (c. 500–570) who describes how the raids of Anglo-Saxon took them "sea to sea, heaped up by the eastern band of impious men, devastated all the neighbouring cities and lands, did not cease after it had been kindled, until it burnt nearly the whole surface of the island, and licked the western ocean with its red and savage tongue." [56]

After a furious war, the king Vortigern was driven out from Britain, who took refuge in North Wales, but his eldest son Vortimer continued to defend the land. He fought four wars against the Saxons, during which he was finally killed along with his brother Catigern.

The term 'Anglo- Saxons' is used for Angles, Saxons, the Jutes and other invaders, who massacred Celts - the indigenous population of Britain along with their nobles. In the meantime, King Vortigern returned back with fresh forces, took the throne and carried war against the invaders, but was killed probably in 455 AD. However, the wars against Anglo-Saxons continued until around 500 AD, when, at the Battle of Mount Badon the Saxons were decisively defeated by the native Celts.[57]

In the meantime, Angles colonized the North Sea and Humber coastal areas by around 500 AD. Later within two decades Anglo-Saxons took control of Sussex, Kent, East Anglia and part of Yorkshire by c. 520; they moved further and conquered all of east Yorkshire. By 596, Angles defeated an alliance of Celts, Scots and Picts at the Battle of Raith.

Thereafter, the invading Anglo-Saxons divided the conquered land of England in seven parts and established their own kingdoms. The kingdom of Kent was the first being established by the Jutes, followed by the kingdoms of Mercia, Northumbria and East Anglia. These conquered territories were jointly called Engla land, or Angle land, from which the name England came. Finally Essex, Sussex, Wessex kingdoms also were established.

Gildas (c. 500 - 570), a monk and British historian of the 6th century, in his work "*De Excidio et Conquestu Britanniae*" (The Overthrow and Conquest of Britain) is one of the few sources of written history for this period of Britain. The conquest of his mother-land Britain left Gildas extremely gloomy. He narrates the "Fall of the Britons - the British Celts" - how the Romans abandoned England, how one Briton imported the first pagan Saxons to fight his battles, and how the pagan Anglo-Saxons seized Britain for themselves and became rulers of this land, which took their name, *Angland (England)*. Gildas also mentions the story of the Briton leader Ambrosius Aurelianus and the defeat of the Saxons at the Battle of Mount Badon in c. 500. He said that this battle was "forty-four years and one month" after

the arrival of the Saxons, and this was also the year of his birth. Despite the victory, Gildas said, the pagan Anglo-Saxons took control of Sussex, Kent, East Anglia and part of Yorkshire. The Celts were driven into Wales and Cornwall in western England.

Gildas further mentioned: the church was now 'tributary', her sons had 'embraced dung' and the nobility had lost their authority to govern. While describing the corruption of the elite, Gildas defines: "they plunder and terrorise the innocent, they defend and protect the guilty and thieving, they have many wives, whores and adulteresses, swear false oaths, tell lies, reward thieves, sit with murderous men, despise the humble, their commanders are 'enemies of God, the leadership, everywhere, immoral and the cause of the "ruin of Britain." [58]

However, the Britons – Native Celtic peoples, mostly Christians by faith remained in servitude of the pagan Anglo-Saxons for over 523 years from 455 to 978 AD, when they were conquered again by the Danish kings (978–1066). During this long period of servitude of over five centuries, the Celts – real sons of the soil lost their identity forever and were branded as “English”; they had to forget their Celtic mother-tongue, adopted English language that emerged out of the many dialects of the invading Anglo-Saxons. The demography of Britain completely changed as the land was given a new name “England” derived out of “Angles Land.”

It was during the reign of Alfred (Alfred the Great) King of Wessex that the West Saxon dialect of this period emerged in the standard written form of Old English. Many scholars were invited by the king from around Angles Land and elsewhere in Europe to his court and with their help translated a range of Latin texts into the Old English. The King Alfred himself did much of the work.

In the meantime, the ruling class of the invading Anglo-Saxons agreed to embrace Christianity. Æthelbert I, King of Kent (c. 560

- 616 AD) was the first Anglo-Saxon ruler who became adherent to the Roman Christianity (Chalcedonian) in 601,[59] mainly converted by Augustine, who arrived here at the instructions of the Pope Gregory I, during 597. Æthelberht later was canonised for Christianity for his role in establishing Chalcedonian Christianity among the Anglo-Saxons. The pagan rulers of Sussex were converted to Christianity by the Saint Wilfrid in 681 along with the rulers of Isle of Wight in 683. When Cenwalh, King of Wessex (643 - 648) was baptised as a result, Wessex became a Christian kingdom. By the end of the millennium, 1000 AD, Christianity was the established religion of the ruling class in England.

Anglo-Saxon England Conquered by Viking Danes 793-1042 AD

In the late 8th century, Viking raids began in England primarily on monasteries. Unofficially, they had full support of the monarchs of Denmark and Norway. The first known account of a Viking raid taking place comes from 789, when three ships from Hordaland (modern Norway) landed in the Isle of Portland on the southern coast of Wessex. They stole, killed and burned villages. The next recorded raid came the following year on June 8, 793, when the monastery at Lindisfarne, an island off the northeast coast was sacked.

In the 840s, the Vikings defeated Æthelwulf, King of Wessex (839 - 858 AD) during a battle fought at Carhampion in Somerset. In the following year, the *Anglo-Saxon Chronicle* records five different attacks on southern England. A Danish fleet of 350

Viking ships took to London and Canterbury, and when King Berhtwulf of Mercia went to their relief he was also defeated. The Vikings then moved on to Surrey, where they were defeated by Æthelwulf at the Battle of Aclea. However, during Æthelwulf's reign Viking attacks were contained and did not pose a major threat. [60]

In 866, Norse armies captured York, one of the two major cities in Anglo-Saxon England. In 865, Viking chief Ragnar Lodbrok was killed by the king Ælla of Northumbria. It was alleged that Ragnar was thrown into a snake pit. In revenge, Ragnar's sons recruited the Great Neathen army that defeated, captured and executed king Ælla on March 21, 867. However, within few years nearly all of the Anglo-Saxon kingdoms fell to the Danes: Northumbria in 867, East Anglia in 869 and Mercia in 874-77. Only the Kingdom of Wessex continued to resist.

In March 878, the Anglo-Saxon King of Wessex, Alfred (the Great), had to take refuge with a small band of followers in the marshes of the Somerset Levels, but after a few months he regrouped his forces and defeated the Guthrum, the then Danes' King of East Anglia at the Battle of Edington fought during May 878. As per Treaty of Wedmore, Guthrum agreed to withdraw immediately the Danes from the Kingdom of Wessex. He also agreed his conversion to Christianity; subsequently Guthrum was baptized at Alfred's hand and renamed as Athelstan. Guthrum remained with the King Alfred for twelve nights. The Treaty also resulted in establishing boundaries of Wessex and the Danes' controlled area that was given a new name "Danelaw." Guthrum reigned as a king in East Anglia for further twelve years until his death in 890.[61][62]

In the meantime, attacks continued on Wessex by new Viking armies. Alfred organised the army into two shifts, devoted funds for ship building and set up a system of fortified towns known as Burhs. By the end of the ninth century there were large-scale

settlements of Danes in various parts of Angles Land and they had achieved political domination over a significant territory.

In 980 Vikings from Scandinavia once again started raids supported by the Danes settled in England. In fear and frustration, many Anglo-Saxons began to demand that a more hostile approach must be taken against the Vikings. In response, King Æthelred the Unready decreed on November 13, 1002 that all Danes living in England should be slaughtered "like weeds in the wheat." It would come to be known as the St. Brice's Day massacre. Historians believe there was significant loss of life. Among those killed during the massacre was Gunhilde, sister of the King Sweyn I of Denmark and her husband Pallig Tokesen. Many Danes were slaughtered in most of the towns and cities such as Oxford, Bristol, Gloucester and London. They were stabbed repeatedly and then killed brutally.

To avenge the massacre of Danes, King Sweyn I of Denmark personally led his forces in a full-scale invasion of England by the end of 1013. After a great destruction and plunder, Sweyn seized the throne of England. King Æthelred escaped to the Isle of Wight and his sons Edward and Alfred moved to Normandy. Sweyn was crowned as King of England on Christmas Day, 1013, making the town of Gainsborough as his capital. But Sweyn was killed just 40 days after his accession on February 3, 1014.^[63] His embalmed body was returned to Denmark for burial.

Sweyn was succeeded in England by his younger son Canute. In the meantime Æthelred, returned from exile in the spring of 1014 and managed to drive Canute out of England. At the time Canute was also King of Norway and Denmark (c.995 -1035 AD). He rushed to reoccupy England in 1015, brought with him around 10,000 warriors supported by 200 warships. The war took fourteen months; subsequently the whole of England was conquered by Canute. His coronation was held in London, at Christmas day 1016. Canute was even recognised by the Anglo-

Saxon nobility as the sole king of England in January 1017 at Oxford.

The first year of his reign was marked by the executions of a number of Anglo-Saxon noblemen whom he considered suspect. He divided England into four large administrative units – Wessex, Northumbria, East Anglia, Mercia, and heavily taxed the defeated population so as to recover the war expenses. Canute retained 40 ships and their crews as a standing force in England.

The Dane Vikings ruled England for 26 years. Canute alone remained occupant of England for nineteen years. During this period, the Vikings stopped their raids – many of them remained under Canute's command. In 1035, Canute died and was succeeded by his son Harold Harefoot. He ruled England until his death in 1040 and was succeeded by Harthacnut, another son of Canute, who took the throne as Canute III. Canute III lived only two years and died on June 8, 1042 by an excessive intake of alcohol. On Harthacnut's death, his half brother Edward the Confessor was made king of England restoring briefly the inheritance of the House of Wessex. Edward ruled England from 1042 to 1066.

King Edward the Confessor died in January 1066 after a reign of 23 years, without an obvious successor. He was succeeded by an Anglo-Saxon Harold Godwinson who was crowned as king of England on the same day. But two of his rivals claimed the throne of England: Harald Hardrada King of Norway and William the Bastard of Normandy. Both invaded England. Harald Hardrada forces landed on the Northern English coast with 300 longships; they took York in September but were defeated by the King Harold Godwinson at the Battle of Stamford Bridge, fought in Yorkshire on September 25. Three weeks later, William the Bastard of Normandy (later William the Conqueror) arrived with a large number of warriors in 700 ships, defeated and killed Harold alongwith two of his brothers

Gyrth and Leofwine, at the Battle of Hastings, fought in Sussex on October 14, 1066.^[64] Harold's body was mutilated. Gytha, Harold's mother, offered William the weight of her son's body in gold for its custody, but her offer was refused. William ordered that Harold's body was to be thrown into the sea but whether that took place is unclear.

Danish England

Conquered by Norman Invader

William the Bastard

1066 – until this day

In 1028, an unmarried French mistress Herleva bore a son William on September 9, 1087, better known by his nickname 'William the Bastard' fathered by Robert I, Duke of Normandy, descendant of Rollo - the most notorious Norsemen Viking raiders who pillaged northern France in the late 9th and early 10th centuries, eventually occupied the territory that was named "Normandy," after the Norsemen. Robert also had a daughter, Adelaide of Normandy, by another mistress. After the death of his father, William the Bastard became a formidable ruler of Normandy in 1035. He was an illiterate and spoke a dialect of French. He conquered England and was crowned as King of England on December 25, 1066. Now England was under the "Norman Yoke." ^[65]

After the conquest of England, William confiscated the entire landholdings of the Native populations, transferred its ownership rights on wholesale basis to his Norman warriors. Such a situation gave rise to a great revolt in 1069 against

William in the Northern England that began initially in the cities of Yorkshire, Northumberland, Somerset and Dorset.

To crush the revolt, William planned the genocide of the people of North England by way of general massacres and famine. He ordained his Norman warriors to strip off all means of survival, burn crops, food stocks, farming tools, destroy all their settlements, loot and kill every person and slaughter their livestock. As a result, whole of North was instantly devastated by a widespread famine. According to the Anglo-Norman chronicler Orderic Vitalis, there were even stories of people turning to cannibalism. Finally, William was successful in crushing the revolt by killing and starvation half of the population of North around, 100,000 men, women and children. As per Domesday Book, compiled in 1085, the total population of England at the time was 2.5 million. Such a series of genocide were carried in the winter of 1069-1070, known as 'Harrying of the North, or a Great Medieval Massacre of 1069'.^{[66][67][68]}

Once the revolt was suppressed, the Norman warriors were officially declared owners of over 95% land holdings in England. They took Oath of Salisbury during 1086, at a gathering of 170 feudal Tenants in-Chief, owners of great fiefdoms to ensure the direct loyalty to the King William the Bastard. The Native populations were made to serve the Norman invaders in their fields. Later William introduced the rank of 'baron' in England for military and financial support. Many of the first barons were recorded in the Domesday Book. Subsequently, a new Norman Nobility emerged in England which later evolved into the House of Lords (House of Norman Invaders) continuing generation after generation. The demography of England completely changed. The descendants of William the Bastard and the Norman Lords rule that country even today. They are addressed as "My Lord, Most Noble, Most Honourable and Right Honorable.

William became the first Norman king of England who was crowned by the Archbishop of York at Westminster Abbey in London on Christmas Day 1066. The Anglo-Saxon England died on the same day. Its army that survived changed their allegiance and became loyal to the new invader William the Bastard who immediately ordered to confiscate almost entire land holdings in England to be transferred officially to his Norman warriors.

In 1086, William ordered a country-wide survey of all the land and holdings in England reserved for the Normans. The officials were instructed to ask specific questions including what the particular place was called, who owned the land before and after the Conquest, its value, how many family members resided there; even how many cattle were kept. For each individual landholding, questions were raised as to how much the land was worth during the reign of Anglo-Saxon King Edward the Confessor, before the conquest. The work was rendered more difficult by the fact that most of England's population spoke Celtic or Old English at the time whilst William's officials spoke Norman-French. It is surprising to note that the data was collected and compiled in two volumes within six months by August 1, 1086.

According to the Domesday Book the overall population of England was about 2.25 million in 1086.^{[66][67][68]} Now the Normans were the new land owners in England. They built castles to defend themselves and took Oath of Salisbury during 1086, in a gathering of 170 feudal tenants-in-chief to ensure the direct loyalty to William the Bastard. The Norman invaders brought with them "French" that was made official court language and the language of upper classes which continued for over four hundred years.

William the Bastard died on September 9, 1087, and was buried in Caen, France. After his death, the people of England remained in perpetual slavery for over millennia under his descendants down to this day.

William II Rufus

1087 - 1100 AD

The immediate consequence of William's death was a war between his sons Robert and William Rufus over the control of England and Normandy. Finally Normandy went to his eldest son Robert, and England to William Rufus who became William II, the second Norman king of England. He did not marry nor did he produce any offspring, legitimate or otherwise.

In 1091, William compelled King Malcolm III of Scotland to acknowledge his overlordship. Malcolm refused. Eventually William killed King Malcolm III of Scotland (1058 - 1093) along with his son on November 13, 1093 at the Battle of Alnwick,^{[69][70]} in Northumberland. Malcolm's Queen Margaret, Christian by faith, died of grief within nine days. (Queen Margaret was eventually canonized by Pope Innocent IV on June 19, 1250 - Scotland's only royal Saint). This is how William brought Scotland firmly under his lordship, maintained the Scottish kings as vassals and in 1097 he subjugated Wales.

In 1096, William's brother Robert Curthose decided to participate in the First Crusade to liberate Jerusalem. He needed money for this venture and pledged his Duchy of Normandy to his brother William in return for a payment of 10,000 marks—a sum equalling about a quarter of William's annual revenue. William raised the required amount by levying a special, heavy

and much-resented tax upon the whole of England. In between 1097 to 1099, William campaigned in France and conquered Maine but failed to seize the French-controlled part of the Vexin region.

On August 2, 1100 William went hunting in the New Forest, near Brockenhurst, and was killed by an arrow through his lung. The earliest statement of the event was in the Anglo-Saxon Chronicle, which reveals that the king was "shot by an arrow by one of his own men."^[71] Later chroniclers added the name of the killer, a nobleman Walter Tirel. The king's body was abandoned by the nobles at the place where he fell. A peasant later found it. His younger brother, Henry, hastened to Winchester to secure the royal treasury, then to London, where he was crowned three days after the death of his brother. On the other side, William's body was taken to Winchester Cathedral by a few countrymen for burial.^[72] His strong-armed rule earned him a reputation as a brutal and corrupt tyrant. He extorted large sums of money from the church by the sale of church appointments. He also quarreled with the archbishop and finally drove him into exile in 1097.

To the chroniclers – men of the Church – such an ‘Act of God’ was a just end for a wicked king who came into conflict with the religious orders.

Henry I

1100 - 1135 AD

Immediately after the death of William II Rufus, his younger brother Henry seized the throne, who was more interested in having a large number of mistresses and illegitimate children. He fathered at least twenty bastards; one of these was the beautiful Nesta, Princess of Wales, who became the mother of the King's son, Henry II. By far the most famous of Henry's illegitimate offspring was Robert of Caen, later created Earl of Gloucester born in 1090, through a Norman mother. Henry married Juliana, one of his illegitimate daughters to Eustace of Breteuil, and another illegitimate daughter Matilda, to Rotrou, the Count of Perche, on the Normandy border.

Henry himself married to Matilda daughter of Malcolm III deceased King of Scotland (1058 - 1093) on November 11, 1100. In 1101, Henry's elder brother Robert, Duke of Normandy invaded England to seize the crown. However, after the Treaty of Alton, Robert agreed to recognise his brother Henry as King against a yearly payment of 3000 marks and some other concessions. Subsequently Robert returned to Normandy.

In 1105, Henry invaded Normandy and defeated his brother Robert at the Battle of Tinchebray. Robert was imprisoned for life and died in captivity during 1134.[73]

Henry's only legitimate son and heir, William Adelin, was drowned in wreck of the *White Ship* disaster of 1120.[74] Henry took a second wife, Adeliza, after the death of Matilda, but their marriage was childless. On Christmas 1126, Henry declared his daughter, Matilda, widow of Henry V, Holy Roman Emperor, as his heir, and married her with the fifteen year older Geoffrey of Anjou in 1127. Matilda gave birth to two sons Henry and Geoffrey in 1133 and 1134. [75]

Stephen of Blois

1135 – 1154 AD

Henry died in Normandy on December 1, 1135, after a week of illness. His body was returned to England and buried at Reading Abbey. In the meantime, the throne was seized by Henry's nephew Stephen of Blois (grandson of William the Bastard), who was crowned king on December 22, 1135. But Henry's daughter Matilda did not give up her claim to England and Normandy. At the time, most of the Anglo-Norman barons did not want to be ruled by a woman.^[76] However, the people of England were trapped in a long nineteen years of Civil War known as 'the Anarchy' for possession of the crown in between Stephen and Matilda. In many parts of the kingdom heavy fighting caused serious devastation and its subjects suffered extensively.

At the other side, after the death of Henry I, King David I of Scotland invaded the Northern England taking Carlisle, Newcastle and other key strongholds. At the time, Northern England was a disputed territory with the Scottish kings laying a traditional claim to Cumberland. King David also claimed Northumbria by virtue of his marriage to the daughter of the former Anglo-Saxon Earl Waltheof. Stephen rapidly marched north and met David at Durham. Finally an agreement was signed under which David would return most of the territory of Northern England, with the exception of Carlisle. In return, Stephen confirmed David's son Prince Henry's possessions in England, including the Earldom of Huntingdon.

In January 1136, south Wales rose in rebellion, starting in east Glamorgan and rapidly spreading across the rest of south Wales during 1137.^[77] By the end of 1137 the King appears to have abandoned attempts to put down the rebellion.

In 1153, after a long period of 19 years of Civil War, a compromise was reached under the Treaty of Wallingford signed in 1153 by which Stephen was to retain the crown for the remainder of his lifetime, whereupon it would revert to Matilda's son, Henry and his heirs. By the following year, King Stephen died and was succeeded by Matilda's grandson, as Henry II. [78]

Stephen probably had three illegitimate sons, Gervase, Ralph and Americ, by his mistress Damette; Gervase became Abbot of Westminster in 1138.

Henry II

1154 - 1189 AD

After Stephen's death, Henry II succeeded to the throne of England and was crowned at Westminster Abbey on December 19, 1154, aged 21.[79] Henry eventually acquired Normandy upon the death of his father and the Counties of Anjou and Maine from his mother. Henry had married Eleanor of Aquitaine, who brought in dowry Aquitaine and Poitou. Eleanor was twelve years older than Henry and former wife of King Louis VII of France.

Henry expanded his empire and acquired Nantes, Quercy, Brittany and Toulouse, as a result, Henry then owned more land in France than the French King himself. By 1172, he controlled large parts of Wales, the eastern half of Ireland, an area that would later come to be called the Angevin Empire.

Henry's such expansion threatened French security. The dynastic marriages of his three daughters gave him political influence in Germany, Castile and Sicily.

Henry had eight legitimate children by Eleanor, five sons - William, the Young Henry, Richard, Geoffrey and John and three daughters, Matilda, Eleanor and Joan. Henry also had several illegitimate children; amongst the most prominent of these were Geoffrey (later Archbishop of York) and William (later Earl of Solisbury). Henry had several long-term mistresses, including Annabel de Balliol and Rosamund Clifford. In 1157 Henry invaded Wales and received homage, though without conquest.

Murder of Archbishop Becket

In 1162, King Henry II appointed Thomas Becket, Archbishop of Canterbury - the most important position in England after the king. Henry and Becket quickly disagreed over a number of issues. In 1164, the first sign of a split between Henry and Thomas Becket occurred when Henry passed the Constitutions of Clarendon - collection of decrees (16 articles), in an attempt to restrict ecclesiastical privileges and curb the power of the Church courts. Becket rejected the Constitutions and in fear fled to France with his family. He took refuge at Henry's opponent, King Louis VII. When King Henry harassed Becket's associates in England, he excommunicated those religious and secular officials siding with the king. The pope supported Becket's case and the Norman church also intervened to assist Henry in finding a solution.

It took six years before Becket felt safe enough to return to England when the Pope Adrian IV intervened. In the meantime, Becket asked the pope to excommunicate the Archbishop of York who had taken sides with the king. This was a very serious request and a very serious punishment for someone who could claim that he was only being loyal to the king. King Henry was furious and said to have shouted out "who will rid me of this troublesome priest?"^[80] Four knights heard what Henry had shouted and took it to mean that the king wanted Becket dead. They rode to Canterbury to carry out the deed. The knights were

Reginald FitzUrse, William de Tracey, Hugh de Morville and Richard le Breton. On December 29, 1170, they murdered Becket in Canterbury Cathedral. Henry took no action to arrest the Becket's killers. But the place where Becket was murdered quickly became a center of pilgrimage and revolt against Henry.[81]

In May 1172, Henry negotiated a settlement with the papacy in which the King swore to go on crusade as well as effectively overturning the Constitutions of Clarendon. In an act of penance, Henry walked bare foot through the streets of Canterbury to pray at the spot where Becket was killed, where eighty monks flogged the king with branches. In 1173, the pope declared Becket a saint.

Ireland donated to England by the Pope

Adrian IV, the lone Anglo-Norman was elected Pope on December 4, 1154 who took no time by donating Ireland to King Henry II of England. The Pope Adrian gave Henry the right to invade and assume control over Ireland. Later the Pope Alexander III, who succeeded Adrian IV, used the words for Henry II as, "illustrious King of England stirred by Divine inspiration." The people of Ireland were abused by both the popes as barbarous, uncivilized, undisciplined, wicked and ignorants of the Divine Law. The parts of the bull issued by the pope Adrian IV, reads as under:

"Adrian, bishop, servant of the servants of God, to his most dearly beloved son in Christ, the illustrious king of the English, greeting and apostolical blessing.[82] We, therefore, regarding *'your pious and laudable design'* with due favour, and graciously assenting to your petition, do hereby declare our will and pleasure, that, for the purpose of enlarging the borders of the Church, setting bounds to the progress of wickedness,

reforming evil manners, planting virtue, and increasing the Christian religion, *you do enter and take possession of that island*, and execute therein whatsoever shall be for God's honour and the welfare of the same. And, further, we do also strictly charge and require that the people of that land shall accept you with all honour, and dutifully obey you, as their liege Lord ..."

Pope Adrian's successor Pope Alexander III¹⁷ also wrote to the Bishops of Ireland calling on him to submit to King Henry II:

"Understanding that our dear son in Christ, Henry, illustrious King of England stirred by divine inspiration and with his united forces has subjected to his dominion, that people *a barbarous one, uncivilized and ignorant of the Divine Law* - we command and enjoin upon you that you will diligently and manfully assist the above said King to maintain and preserve that land and to extirpate the filthiness of such great abominations. "[83]

In a similar streak Pope Alexander commanded the Princes of Ireland:

"Whereas you have received our dear son in Christ, Henry, illustrious King of England as your king and Lord and have sworn fealty to him ... we ward and admonish your noble order to strive to preserve the fealty which by solemn oath you have made." [83]

Subsequently Henry claiming the Divine Will and sovereignty over the island, invaded Ireland in 1171, forced the local Irish rulers to accept him as their overlord.

The Roman Pontiff in a letter congratulating Henry on his conquest of Ireland:

"We have been assured how you have wonderfully triumphed over the people of Ireland and over a Kingdom which the Roman Emperors, the conquerors of the world left untouched, and you have extended the power of your majesty over the same people, a race "uncivilized and undisciplined" ...[83]

In 1172, the ancient Celtic Church of Ireland was brought into submission to the yoke of Roman Catholic Church.

Great Rebellion of 1173 - 74

In March 1173, three sons of the King Henry: Young Henry, heir to the throne, aged 18 years, Richard and Geoffrey (Henry's illegitimate son) revolted to overthrow their father against the question of their future inheritance. They fled to Paris, assisted by their mother Queen Eleanor, who was captured in France dressed as a man. She was imprisoned by her husband Henry for ten long years until 1180. The rebel sons of Henry were supported by the French King Louis, King William of Scotland the Counts of Boulogne, Flanders and Blois and most of the barons of England, Normandy, Brittany, Maine, Poitou and Angouleme - all of whom were promised lands if they won. The three brothers made an oath at the French court that they would not make terms with Henry II without the consent of Louis VII and the French barons. Young Henry also wrote to the pope, complaining about his father's behaviour. Young Henry had been married to Marguerite, daughter of Louis VII of France during 1160.

In retaliation, King Henry II raised an army of more than 20,000 mercenaries against his sons. He marched on Verneuil, recaptured Dol and subdued Brittany. At this point Henry II made an offer of peace to his sons but such discussions at Gisors soon broke down. Meanwhile the Henry's army defeated a superior force of rebel sons in the Battle of Fornham fought

during April 1173, near Fornham, in East Anglia. Again in January 1174 the forces of Young Henry attacked, threatening to push through into central Normandy, but failed.[84]

In the meantime, William of Scotland attacked the south of England but was defeated and captured by the Henry' forces at Alnwick. William was not released until he had agreed to the Treaty of Falaise signed in December 1174, under which he publicly gave homage to Henry and surrendered to him five key Scottish castles. During rebellion of Henry's sons, many towns and other settlements were devastated and a large number of people killed. At least twenty castles in England were recorded as demolished.

Finally in 1175, Prince Richard surrendered before his father and raised arms against his brother Young Henry who invaded Aquitaine in 1183, at that occasion it was announced that Young Henry had died of a fever, bringing a sudden end to the rebellion.[85] Later in 1186, Henry's second rebel son Geoffrey also died in Paris.[86] One of their brothers William already had died during 1156. In 1189, Prince Richard again revolted, attacked and defeated his father at Ballans, with the assistance of Philip II Augustus of France. Richard forced his wounded father to accept a humiliating peace terms, who died two days after on July 6, 1189, aged 56.

Richard I

1189 - 1199 AD

After the death of king Henry II, his third son Richard I became King of England, Duke of Normandy, Duke of Aquitaine, Duke of Gascony, Lord of Cyprus, Count of Poitiers, Count of Anjou, Count of Maine, Count of Nantes and Overlord of Brittany.

He was crowned in Westminster Abbey on September 3, 1189.^[87] His first order was to release immediately his mother, Queen Eleanor from the captivity she had endured for the last ten years. He also honored his illegitimate half-brother Geoffrey Plantagenet, nominated him as Archbishop of York. Richard also made a solemn vow to free the Holy City, Jerusalem and announced to join the Crusades - holy wars waged by the Christian kingdoms of Europe to liberate Jerusalem from the Arab Muslims then under Saladin. There were four such major Crusades in the years 1096, 1146, 1187, and 1203.

During coronation of Richard, Jews were not allowed to attend the ceremony. Unknown to such decision, some Jewish leaders arrived to present gifts for the new king. They were stripped and flogged by the courtiers, then were thrown out of court. Within no time, rumours instantly spread throughout London that the King Richard had ordered all the Jews to be killed.^[88] As a result, on the very same day of coronation riots swept and the citizens of London instantly started attacking the Jewish population. Many Jews were killed, their homes were burned down and several were forcibly baptised. Some sought sanctuary in the Tower of London and others managed to escape. Among those killed was Jacob of Orleans, a noted Jewish scholar, considered by many to be one of the most learned men of his age. The riot lasted twenty-four hours; the chief justice and some noblemen were sent by the king to quell the disorder.

Three of the culprits were hanged and those Jews converted forcibly were allowed to return to their faith.

Richard and Philip Augustus, King of France both agreed to go together for the Third Crusade. Richard imposed heavy taxes to raise a new crusader army. He even sold Scotland against a sum of 10,000 marks to King William I of Scotland, released him from his oath of subservience to Richard. He also sold official positions, lands, and other privileges. Those already appointed were forced to pay huge sums to retain their posts: William Longchamp, Bishop of Ely as well as King's Chancellor paid £3,000 to keep his post. He even taxed the clergy, usually exempt from taxes. When Richard was raising funds for his crusade, he declared, "I would have sold London if I could find a buyer."^[89] By such methods Richard raised and equipped a force which may be estimated at 4000 men-at-arms and as many foot-soldiers, with a fleet of 100 transports.

When Richard crossed the Channel to join Philip Augustus in the Crusade, riots broke out afresh against the Jews in March 1190, including a massacre at York. The mobs were incited by the leaders of the Crusades to pillage and massacre whole Jewish communities. The cry was: "Before attempting to revenge ourselves upon the Muslim unbelievers, let us first revenge ourselves upon the 'killers of Christ' living in our midst!"^[90] For Jews, the alternatives were to renounce their faith, surrender to forced baptism or death at the hands of the mob. Some seeing no way out, decided to commit suicide. After killing their wives and children they set fire and killed themselves. The entire Jewish community of York, who had taken refuge in the royal castle where now stands Clifford's Tower were massacred, estimated 150 Jews.

While enroute to Jerusalem, Richard and Philip arrived in Sicily during September 1190, where Queen Joan, sister of Richard was imprisoned after the death of her husband King William II by her nephew Tancred, the new King, who was also refusing to

return her dowry. Richard demanded release of his sister along with her dowry. When Tancred refused, Richard attacked and captured Messina, looted thoroughly and burned the city. Finally on October 4, 1190 King Tancred surrendered, freed Joan and signed a treaty on March 4, 1191,^[91] under which Joan received 20,000 ounces (570 kg) of gold as compensation against dowry. Richard officially proclaimed his nephew, Arthur of Brittany son of Geoffrey as heir to the Kingdom of Sicily, and the king Tancred promised to marry one of his daughters to Arthur while coming to age. Tancred further paid 20,000 ounces (570 kg) of gold to Richard as 'guarantee' refundable if Arthur did not marry his daughter.

In Sicily, Richard informed King Phillip of France that he intended to marry the Princess Berengaria of Navarre, the daughter of Sancho VI of Navarre, whom his mother was escorting to Sicily. Although at the age of three, King Richard was betrothed officially to Philip's sister, Alys. Gossip claimed that Richard's refusal was based on the story that Alys had been supposedly the mistress of Richard's father Henry II, and even had borne the late King's child. King Philip of France was shocked and left for Jerusalem.

When Richard prepared to move towards the Holy Land, he was informed that the ship carrying his sister Joan and his fiancée Berengaria had wrecked in a violent storm on the coast of Cyprus. They were made hostages by Isaac Comnenus, King of Cyprus. Richard turned to Cyprus, invaded and burned its port city Lemesos (Limassol), overthrew King Isaac on June 1, 1191 and recovered both his sister Joan and fiancée.

In Cyprus, Richard married Berengaria, daughter of the King Sancho VI of Navarre, celebrated the occasion with great splendour. Marriage celebrations followed by a double coronation. Richard was crowned as King of Cyprus and Berengaria as Queen of England and Cyprus. Before leaving for Jerusalem, Richard sold Cyprus against 100,000 bezants to

Robert de Sable, head of the Knights Templar – known as the soldiers of Christ. They immediately paid 40,000 bezants. When the Templar could not pay rest of the amount, Richard again sold Cyprus to one Guy of Lusignan, financed by the Italian merchants. The Templars received only castles at Gastria, Khiokitia, Yermsoyia and Limassol. They largely used Cyprus as a base for their financial and commercial transactions. In July 1296, Pope Boniface VIII issued a Papal Bull, which gave the Templars a tax-free status on exports and imports to and from Cyprus.

Finally, Richard left Cyprus for the Holy Land along with his new wife and landed at Acre on June 8, 1191, then under siege by the forces of Philip of France and Leopold V of Austria. Richard joined the siege and the city of Acre surrendered. Immediately after the surrender, all the three leaders of Crusade disagreed over the distribution of the spoils including 2,700 Arab Muslim prisoners.^[92] Leopold V of Austria also quarrelled with Richard over the deposition of King Isaac Komnenos of Cyprus, related to Leopold's mother. A further cause of dissension was Richard's support of Guy de Lusignan, King of Jerusalem, while Philip Augustus and Leopold supported his rival for the title, Conrad of Montferrat. Under the circumstances, King Phillip decided to abandon the Crusade and set sail for France on 3rd August, followed by Leopold V of Austria.

Richard in desperation executed ruthlessly all the 2,700 Muslim prisoners. He won a brilliant victory over the forces of Saladin at Arsuf on September 7, 1191 and twice reached within a few miles of Jerusalem, but could not liberate the Holy city. He even made one last attempt to strengthen his bargaining position by attempting to invade Egypt—Saladin's chief supply base, but failed. Finally on September 2, 1192, Richard agreed to sign a three-year truce with Saladin thereby the Christian pilgrims and merchants were allowed to visit Jerusalem.

For over sixteen months stay within the jurisdiction of Jerusalem, Richard sailed from Corfu with four attendants, on his way back to England on October 9, 1192. He was captured near Vienna by Leopold V, Duke of Austria and was kept strictly confined in the castle of Durenstein on the Danube. His mishap was soon known to England, but initially they were uncertain of his whereabouts. On March 28, 1193 King Richard was handed over to Henry VI, Holy Roman Emperor, who imprisoned him in Trifels Castle.[94]

For the wrongful imprisonment of King Richard, Pope Celestine III (1191 - 1198) excommunicated the Holy Roman Emperor Henry VI, who demanded a huge ransom of 150,000 marks (65,000 pounds of silver) for his release. Richard's mother Eleanor of Aquitaine worked to raise the ransom. Clergy and laymen were taxed for a quarter of the value of their property, the gold and silver treasures of the churches were confiscated, and money was raised even from the scutage and the carucage taxes. At the same time, John, Richard's brother and King Philip of France offered 80,000 marks for the Emperor to hold Richard as prisoner until 1194. The emperor turned down the offer. Finally the money to rescue the King was transferred to Germany and Richard was released on February 4, 1194. At the time, King Philip of France sent a message to John, brother of Richard, who had been ruling England in his stead: "Look to yourself; the devil is loose". Even Richard himself was said to be fond of quoting the Norman legend "From the Devil we sprang and to the Devil we shall go."

On arrival in England, Richard was crowned for a second time. Just after a month he went to Normandy, never to return. His last five years were spent in wars against Philip II of France. In 1198, Richard took "Dieu et mon Droit" – "God and my Right" – as his motto (still used by the British monarchy today).[94] During his ten years' reign, Richard was in England for six months and spoke only French.

On March 25, 1199, while walking on the walls of Chalus castle, a bolt was shot aimed at the king by a crossbow boy named Pierre or Peter who claimed that Richard had killed the boy's father and two brothers, and he did in revenge. Richard was fatally wounded and died in the arms of his mother on April 6,

1199. Later the crossbow boy was flayed alive and hanged. After death, Richard's heart was buried at Rouen in Normandy, his entrails in Chalus (where he died), and the rest of his body was buried at his father's feet in the church of Fontevrault, in Anjou, France.

Richard, also known as the 'Lion Heart' generally was believed by the historians a predominantly homosexual, who produced no legitimate heirs, acknowledged only one illegitimate son, Philip of Cognac. As a result, he was succeeded by his brother John as King of England.

John Lackland

1199 - 1216

John known as John Lackland inherited Kingdom of England on April 6, 1199, after the death of his brother Richard, who during his reign robbed repeatedly his subjects, his barons and even the Clergy in the name of Crusade. While returning from Crusade, Richard was kidnapped by Leopold V, Duke of Austria and then handed over to Henry VI, Holy Roman Emperor. He remained in captivity continuously for two long years and was released after paying a huge unbearable ransom. The amount then was again collected forcibly from the people of England that crippled the nation economically and morally.

Philip, King of France took full advantage of the situation and occupied Anjou, Poitou, Normandy and other British territories over the French soil. As a result, the so-called 'Angevin Empire' established by Henry II disappeared in 1204. The urge to recover their territories over the French soil became a severe 'infectious disease' that developed into a 'brain cancer' in members of the Norman monarchs of England. It became a permanent job of the monarchs of England to invade and conquer France. The disease began with the King John who commanded the Parliament to provide him funds for war with France. But the subject populations and the barons, Norman by descent showed their inability to pay huge amount beyond their limits for large scale war against France.

John had nothing to do with such grievances, he was a king with Divine Rights, wanted to recover territories over the French soil owned by his forefathers. King John, on his own powers, imposed a new set of import and export duties payable directly to the crown. A new tax on income and movable goods was also introduced. Even funds were raised by confiscating lands of

those barons who could not pay or refused to pay taxes. He also received income from fines, court fees, sale of charters and other privileges. He also shamelessly continued to sell charters for new towns, including the planned town of Liverpool. Charters were sold for markets across the kingdom and in Gascony. He levied scutage payments eleven times more. Mainly Jews were subjected to unbearable taxes. This resulted in political unrest across the kingdom.

In 1209, John marched with his army to the Scottish border and demanded William's submission. Sixty-six years old William did not dare to refuse, paid John 15,000 marks and surrendered two of his daughters as hostages.

In 1205, Archbishop Hubert of Canterbury died and the monks secretly elected one of their own members as his successor.^[95] King John refused to accept the election, appointed his favorite - John de Gray (*ob.* 1214) in his place. Pope Innocent III (1198-1216) refused to accept either candidate. Instead, he arranged in 1207 the election of his own choice Stephen Langton (1150 - 1228). In retaliation, John expelled the monks of Canterbury and prohibited Stephen Langton to land in the kingdom. In retaliation, the Pope Innocent III placed England under *Interdict* in 1208, suspended Christian services thereby the dead were denied Christian burial continuously for six years until 1214.

To counter the Pope's Interdict, King John pressurized the clergy to ignore the Interdict by using fines and imprisonment. In turn the Pope excommunicated John, deprived him of all his rights as a Christian king. Pope also commanded Philip of France to invade England and oust John from the throne. Under such threats, King John surrendered to the pope on May 13, 1213, became his vassal, acknowledged the pope as Lord of England. The Pope lifted the Interdict in 1214.

In 1214, King John again prepared for war against France to recover the British territories over the French soil.^[96] The Barons

again showed their inability to provide funds as well as the warriors for war.

As a result, John issued a demand for "scutage" in 1215 from all those barons who had failed to serve the king in his war with France, at the rate of three marks (forty shillings) per shield. The traditional rate was one mark (thirteen shilling and four pence) per shield. Even King Richard had never demanded more than twenty shillings per knight. The king already had levied high taxes on land and movables during 1203 and 1207. The barons complained to Pope Innocent III (then Lord of England) but he simply advised the barons to obey the king.

In the meantime, King John secretly negotiated with his cousin the Holy Roman Emperor Otto IV (of Germany) for assistance in war with France. As a result, John was ready for one of the Great Wars of Europe, known as the 'Battle of Bouvines' fought on July 27, 1214 against Philip Augustus of France. King John was assisted by the combined forces of the Holy Roman Emperor Otto IV (of Germany), Ferdinand of Portugal, First Duke Henry I of Brabant, Count William I of Holland, Duke Theobald of Lorraine, Duke Henry III of Limburg, Ferdinand, the Counts of Flanders, William Longespee, Boulogne, Renaud and others, with an estimated 25,000 warriors.

King Philip of France himself landed and led the war with a force of 11,000 foot soldiers, 4,000 knights and mounted sergeants.[97] On the other side, Holy Emperor Otto IV, with his Flemish contingents marched on Paris from the north, while King John landed in La Rochelle and advanced from the southwest. After two encounters with the French, John was defeated on July 2, 1214 and retreated to Aquitaine. A decisive battle was fought in the marshy plain of Bouvines in Flanders on July 27, 1214 that gave a decisive victory to the French King Philip Augustus. During the war, King Philip himself was unhorsed, but saved by his bodyguards.

At the Allied command, Renaud and Ferdinand were taken prisoners by the French forces; the Holy Roman Emperor Otto himself being saved only by the devotion of a handful of Saxon knights, who managed to escape and took refuge in Cologne. Around 700 captured warriors brought by the Duke of Brabant were put to the sword. The prisoners also included two other counts, Hainaut Ferrand and William Longespee, twenty-five barons and over a hundred knights. The death toll amounted to about 170 knights of the defeated party and many thousands of foot soldiers on either side. Philip returned to Paris triumphantly, marching his captive prisoners behind him in a long procession.

Consequently Philip remained occupant of the entire British territory over the French soil, namely Normandy, Anjou, Brittany, Maine and the Touraine, leading to the effective end of the Angevin Empire.

Following the defeat at the Battle of Bouvines, John had to pursue for peace and pay compensation. Finally John arrived back to England in October 1214 and again asked the parliament for funds to war with France. The barons had no choice but to fight the half-mad King; they assembled under arms at Stamford led by Eustace de Vesci and Robert Fitz Walter, renouncing all allegiance to John, capturing London, Lincoln and Exeter, in May 1215. Stephen Langton the new Archbishop of Canterbury along with many barons drew up a list of grievances as well as a new charter to be presented to the king.

On June 15, 1215, John met the rebel barons headed by Stephen Langton, archbishop of Canterbury, on an island in the Thames art Runnymede, near Windsor Castle. After long discussions, John signed the Great Charter, later renamed *Magna Carta* (The Great Charter) with a main objective to bring the Norman monarchs of England under the rule of law. It promised protection from illegal imprisonment, access to swift justice; new taxation only with baronial consent; limitations on scutage and

other feudal payments; protection of church rights; contained in all 63 clauses.

The Charter also established a council of twenty-five barons to monitor and ensure its thorough implication. By the clause 61 of the Charter (security clause) the 'Baron Army' would stand down with the right to wage war on John if he refuses to abide by its rules. It was also agreed through clause 51 of the Charter that all the foreign born knights will be banished along with crossbowmen, serjeants and mercenary soldiers who have come with horses and arms to the kingdom. The clause 54 reads: "No one shall be arrested or imprisoned upon the appeal of a woman, for the death of any other than her husband." At this occasion, Gerald of Wales remarked: "The madness of slavery is over, the time of liberty has been granted, English necks are free from the yoke."

Violating the Great Charter, King John began to confiscate the baron's lands and approached the Pope Innocent III for help. The Pope issued a religious order - the Papal Bull on August 24, 1215, declaring the charter to be "not only shameful and demeaning but also illegal and unjust"[98] since John had been "forced to accept" it, and accordingly the charter was "null, and void of all validity for ever." Simultaneously, the Pope excommunicated the barons.

King John refused to honour the terms of *Magna Carta*. As a result, the civil war turned into a dynastic war for the throne of England. The rebel barons concluded that peace with John was impossible, turned to Prince Louis, son and heir apparent of Philip Augustus, King of France, offering him the throne of England. Prince Louis already had a claim to the throne by virtue of his marriage to Blanche of Castile, a granddaughter of Henry II.

In May 1216, French Prince Louis landed unopposed in Kent. King John escaped to the Saxon capital of Winchester. Louis entered London and was openly received by the rebel barons

and citizens of London, proclaimed King of England (though not crowned) at St. Paul's cathedral. Many nobles gathered, including Alexander II, King of Scotland to give homage to Louis. Sensing a tide of change, many supporters of John moved to support the barons.

At the other side, King John while crossing the River Ouse, lost supplies and large amount of treasures that were washed away. On reaching the castle Newark, Nottinghamshire, King John suddenly died on October 19, 1216. Numerous accounts circulated soon after his death that John had been killed by poison.[99] His body was escorted south by a company of mercenaries and was buried in Worcester Cathedral.

John had five legitimate children, all by Isabella. He also had a number of illegitimate children by various mistresses, including nine sons: Richard, Oliver, John, Geoffrey, Henry, Osbert Gifford, Eudes, Bartholomew and probably Philip – and three daughters – Joan, Maud and probably Isabel. Of these, Joan was married to Llywelyn the Great, Ruler of All Wales. John also alienated at least one important Lord (Eustace de Vesci) by pursuing

Henry III

1216 - 1272 AD

At the death of his father King John, nine years old Prince Henry inherited the throne when over half of England was occupied by the rebel barons led by the French Prince Louis, son of the French King Philip II Augustus, also controlling Westminster abbey, London.

At the time, a number of barons along with Pierre des Roches, bishop of Winchester rushed to meet the young Henry to be crowned as king of England. Since London was held by the French Louis, therefore coronation was held at Gloucester Abbey on October 28, 1216, in front of a small attendance presided over by a Papal Legate in England Guala Bicchieri. William Marshal, 1st Earl of Pembroke was declared the protector and regent of Henry III, who slowly managed to get most barons to switch sides from Louis to Henry.

On November 12, 1216 Magna Carta was reissued in King Henry's name with some of the clauses omitted, including clause 61, the security clause. The revised charter was sealed by the regent William Marshal, who promised that he, on behalf of the King Henry would rule following Magna Carta. In the meantime, majority of the rebel nobles changed their minds and threw their support to Henry III.

The new Pope Honorius declared that Henry was the Pope's vassal and ward,^[100] and that the legate had complete authority to protect Henry and his kingdom. Cardinal Guala declared that Henry's war against the rebels was a 'religious crusade.'

By 1217, Henry's forces, led by William Marshal, defeated the French Prince Louis and arrested large number of senior rebels, at the battles of Lincoln and Sandwich fought in 1217. During

the the Battle of Sandwich, the leading French supporter Eustace the Monk was captured and executed. Eustace was tied down and his head was struck off with one blow. Many French soldiers were slaughtered or thrown into the Channel. In the meantime, French Prince Louis was totally cut off from his logistic base. Under the circumstances, he negotiated terms with Cardinal Guala, under which Louis formally renounced his claim to the throne of England, in return of being allowed an unmolested departure from England. The Treaty of Lambeth was signed on September 11, 1217 at Kingston upon Thames. The barons who had joined Louis paid him £6,666 to speed up his departure from England.

The Pope allowed Henry to be crowned for a second time, using a new set of royal regalia.^[101] Since Henry's mother was unable to establish a role for herself in the regency government, she returned to France in 1217, marrying Hugh de Lusignan, a powerful Poitevin noble. William Marshal fell ill and died in April 1219.

Reaching at the age of 24, Henry prepared in 1230 to reconquer territories over the French soil once possessed by his ancestors. For the expenses of war, the Jews of England were made target to such an extent that they lost ability to do business. Henry built a *Domus Conversorum* in London to help convert Jews to Christianity. In the meantime, the fearful Great Council of the barons resisted and reluctantly approved a huge tax of £40,000 for John to war with France. However, the invasion failed and Henry made a truce with Louis in 1234 thereby achieved nothing and returned back to England. Even Brittany was occupied by Louis in November.

In 1236, Henry married Eleanor of Provence, whose sister Margaret had already married Louis IX of France. With this marriage many members of her family along with the members of French court came to England; many came from Anjou and other parts of France. At least 170 Savoyards arrived in England

after 1236, coming from Savoy, Burgundy and Flanders and were rewarded with huge estates, largely at the expense of the local barons. Eleanor's maternal uncle, Peter of Savoy, was granted the honour of Richmond and his brother, Boniface was made Archbishop of Canterbury. Henry made his half brother, William de Valence, Earl of Pembroke, while another half brother, Aymer, became bishop-elect of Winchester. Serious concerns were raised about the number of foreigners in England that initially caused friction with the barons.

Mentally sick for recovering former territories over the French soil, Henry III invaded Poitou in 1242, leading to the disastrous Battle of Taillebourg. Finally in 1259, he enacted a peace with France under which Henry gave up all his rights to their lands in France, except Gascony. In 1253, Henry again turned to the Jews, passed the Statute of Jewry which attempted to separate the Jews by forcing them to wear Jewish badges.

When Henry again approached the Parliament for funds to acquire kingship of Sicily for his second son Edmund, majority of the barons opposed the king, resulting in the Second Barons War that broke out in April 1264, headed by Simon de Montfort, who seized the power.^[102] The king escaped. Simon was the French-born Earl of Leicester and was married to king's sister, Eleanor.

Before war, the barons arranged to meet King Henry at Oxford in June of 1258 and forced him to sign 'Provisions of Oxford' - by which a council of fifteen members were to advise the king. In the meantime, Simon de Montfort and his forces captured most of southeastern England by 1263. Henry III approached the French king Louis IX for assistance. As per the Treaty of Paris signed in 1259 Henry admitted that England had no more rights to the lands of Normandy, Maine, Anjou and Poitou that had been lost by King John. Henry was allowed to keep lands in Gascony and Aquitaine as long as he accepted the French king as

his overlord in these areas. In return King Louis had promised to assist Henry in the fight against the barons.

Henry also approached the Pope for help. The Pope declared that the Provisions of Oxford were illegal as Henry had been forced to sign the documents. Freed from the obligations, Henry went on the offensive against the barons, assisted by the French bodyguards. Finally at the Battle of Lewes, fought on May 14, 1264, King Henry was captured along with his brother, Richard, Earl of Cornwall and his eldest son, Edward. They were held as prisoners.

On January 20, 1265, Simon De Montfort called the first Parliament of England,[103] in the Palace of Westminster, now known as the House of Parliament, consisting of knights and leading men who were chosen in the counties and major towns of England. After suffering about fifteen months in prison, Henry's son Edward, aged 25, escaped and joined the group of barons opposing Simon de Montfort. While leading the royalists into battle, Edward defeated and killed Simon de Montfort and many of his allies at the Battle of Evesham fought on August 4, 1265,[104] which effectively ended the rebellion. After killing Simon De Montfort, his body was cut into pieces and his head sent to Wigmore Castle. Some of his remains which could be found were buried beneath the altar of Evesham Abbey. The casualties of the war were estimated at 15,000. After the Battle of Evesham, Henry quickly took revenge on his enemies. He immediately ordered the confiscation of all the rebel lands, triggering a wave of hectic looting across the country.

On the evening of November 16, 1272, Henry III died in Westminster and was buried in Westminster Abbey. In 1292 Henry's heart was removed from his tomb and reburied at Fontevraud Abbey with the corpses of his Angevin family. Father of five legitimate children, Henry had no illegitimate children.

Edward I

1274 - 1307 AD

Two years after the death of his father King Henry III in 1272, his first son Edward reached England and was crowned at Westminster, London on August 19, 1274

In August 1270, Edward had left England to join the Crusade along with the French king Louis IX. They were the last crusaders pursuing their campaign aiming to recover the Holy Lands.

But before Edward's arrival, French King Louis died of plague in Tunis.^[105] Edward arrived in Acre in May 1271 with 1,000 knights. His small force limited him to the relief of Acre and a handful of raids. In the meantime, Henry III died and Edward was proclaimed king of England by hereditary right. Edward finally arrived in London in August 1274, aged 35 and was crowned at Westminster Abbey.^[106] Edward also inherited a war psyche, Divine Rights and unyielding desire to reconquer their lands over the French soil. Since they were the conqueror of England, fount of power therefore they never agreed to run the affairs under law. What they said or desired was the law of the land.

In 1189, when Richard I succeeded his father Henry II, he became King of England, Duke of Normandy, Duke of Aquitaine, Duke of Gascony, Lord of Cyprus, Count of Poitiers, Count of Anjou, Count of Maine, Count of Nantes and Overlord of Brittany. Richard then owned more land in France than the French King himself. Richard's such expansion even threatened French security.

In 1204, King Philip of France invaded and occupied Normandy, Anjou and Poitou – as a result, the so-called British Angevin Empire disappeared, established by Henry II. From then on, it became a continuous sacred job for the Norman kings of England to wage wars against France for recovery of their lands over the continent, at the cost the huge sufferings of their subjects. King Richard already had repeatedly robbed his subjects; even Clergy was looted in the name of Crusade and wars with France.

When the people of England and its elite (barons) were unable to fulfill non-stop demands of the Norman rulers, they decided to revolt during the days of King John. The barons of England, mostly Normans and French by descent, occupied London as well as Lincoln and Exeter in May 1215. On June 15, 1215, John met the rebel leaders at Runnymede, where the king was proposed to sign an agreement based on political reforms later renamed *Magna Carta* (Law of the land).[107][108] It was an effort to bring the monarchs of England under the rule of law, but the King John agreed and within no time disagreed. He was of the opinion that there was a war in between the king and the barons. To get rid of the Norman conquerors, the barons invited French Prince Louis, son and heir apparent of Philip Augustus, King of France. Subsequently the French Prince conquered over half of England. In the meantime, King John died in the midst of invasion on the night of October 18, 1216. He was succeeded by his nine-years-old son Henry III. William Marshal, 1st Earl of Pembroke was declared the protector of the king, who to pacify the barons, reissued *Magna Carta* in Henry's name on November 12, 1216 with some of the clauses omitted. William Marshal clearly promised that he and the other regents would rule England by *Magna Carta*.

By 1217, Henry's forces, led by William Marshal, defeated the French Prince Louis and arrested large number of senior rebels, at the battles of Lincoln and Sandwich in 1217. The barons who

had joined Louis paid him some amount for his immediate departure from England.

Again in 1230, King Henry attempted to reconquer the provinces of France. The council of Barons reluctantly approved a conditional huge tax of £40,000 for the expenses of war with France. Henry also extracted huge sums of money from the Jews in England, ultimately crippling their ability to do business. But the Henry's invasion failed.

When Henry approached Parliament for further extra funds for war to acquire kingship of Sicily for his second son Edmund, majority of the Barons vowed to stand together and oppose the king, resulting in the Second Barons War that Simon de Montfort that broke out in April 1264,^[109] headed by who seized the power. Simon was closely related to the King Henry, who had been married to the king's sister, Eleanor. At the Battle of Lewes, King Henry and his eldest son, Edward, along with his brother, Richard, Earl of Cornwall, were captured by the Barons on May 14, 1264 and held prisoner.

On January 20, 1265, Simon De Montfort called the First British Parliament in the Palace of Westminster, now known as the Houses of Parliament. It was for the first time that the cities and burghs sent their representatives to the parliament.

After about fifteen months, Henry's son Edward, aged 25, escaped from captivity and joined the group of barons opposing Simon de Montfort. While leading the royalists into battle, Edward defeated and killed Simon de Montfort and many of his allies at the Battle of Evesham on August 4, 1265, which effectively ended the rebellion. After killing De Montfort, his body was cut into pieces and his head sent to Wigmore Castle.

Following this victory, King Henry's authority was restored and orders were issued for confiscating the rebel lands. It also triggered a wave of hectic looting and terror across the country.

In 1270, Edward, his wife Eleanor and his brother Edmund left England to join the Eighth Crusade along with Louis IX of France. Edward probably brought with him around 225 knights and altogether less than 1000 men. Edward decided to continue alone, and on 9 May 1271 he finally landed at Acre. It was not until 24 September that Edward left Acre. Arriving in Sicily, he was met with the news that his father had died on 16 November.^[110]

After about one and a half year when Edward was on his way back to home, he learned in Sicily about the death of his father on November 16, 1272. He was afraid of the situation in England, therefore delayed his arrival for long two years. He deliberately embarked on an overland journey through Italy and France, where among other things he visited the Pope in Rome, stayed for several months in Gascony and suppressed there a rebellion. Only on August 2, 1274 he did return to England, and was crowned on August 19, 1274. In Edward's absence, the country was governed by a royal council, led by Robert Burnell.

Soon after assuming the throne, Edward set about restoring order and re-establishing royal authority. To accomplish this, he immediately ordered an extensive change of administrative personnel. Edward then replaced most local officials. He set inquiry to establish what land and rights of the crown had lost during the reign of his father Henry III.

Conquest of Wales

During the 1250s Edward's father, King Henry III had mounted military campaigns in an attempt to control and dominate Wales. After a series of disastrous defeats Henry was forced to sign a Treaty of Montgomery in 1267, in which King Henry III acknowledged the royal status of Llewellyn as Prince of Wales, and accepted that the title should descend to Llewelyn's heirs.

Llywellyn in turn paid homage to the king and returned some lands he had taken in England. An amount of 25,000 marks (£16,666) was also paid to King Henry by Llewellyn.

After the death of Henry III, the Welsh Prince Llywellyn declared independence,^[111] rejected the Treaty of Montgomery and refused to attend coronation of the new King Edward son of Henry III, held in 1274. He further enraged Edward by announcing in 1275 to marry Eleanor, daughter of Simon de Montfort, a revolutionary, 6th Earl of Leicester, whose wife Eleanor Plantagenet was Henry III's sister. King Edward I was of the opinion that the Prince of Wales was seeking to stir up another Barons' War in England.

When Eleanor set sail from France to Wales to meet her bridegroom, she was kidnapped and imprisoned by Edward at Windsor Castle for three years.

Edward summoned Llewelyn to appear before him on several occasions, which Llewelyn refused on the grounds that he was not safe at Edward's court. In 1276, Edward declared Llewellyn a rebel and gathered an enormous army to march against him.

To conquer Wales, Edward I exclusively taxed the exhausted Jewish population. When they could no longer pay, they were accused of disloyalty. Over three hundred Jews were taken to the Tower of London and executed while others were murdered in their homes. Edward decreed that the Jews were a threat to the country, therefore they were made to wear a yellow patch in the shape of a star. Finally in 1290, the King banished all Jews from England – minus their money and property.

By the summer of 1277, Edward's forces had reached the heart of Gwynedd. Edward's forces confiscated the harvest in Anglesey, which deprived Llewellyn's army of sustenance. Llywellyn finally surrendered paid homage and tribute to Edward. Under the Treaty of Aberconwy, Llewellyn had to pay a huge fine of

£50,000, had to travel to Edward's Christmas Court in London to repeat the oath of homage.

Llewellyn authority was confined to the lands west of the River Conwy; much of the land to its east was granted to Dafydd, brother of Llywellyn. Llywellyn was not deprived of the title of Prince of Wales, but most of the lesser Welsh rulers no longer recognised him as overlord. Llewellyn was also allowed to marry Eleanor. In 1278, Llewellyn and Eleanor de Montfort were married in Worcester Cathedral with Edward present at the wedding.

After a gap of few years, Llywellyn's brother Dafydd revolted and attacked Hawarden Castle in March 1282. He then laid siege to Rhuddlan, which led to war with King Edward. Llywellyn, who had not initially been involved in such a move, nevertheless he was dragged in the war against the King of England.

The Anglo-Norman forces arrived. The Archbishop of Canterbury attempted to mediate; Llywellyn was offered an earldom and estates in England if he would surrender Wales to Edward, while Dafydd was to go on crusade. Finally negotiations failed. After a fierce Battle at Orewin Bridge fought on December 11, at Builth Wells, Llywellyn was slain.

Llywellyn's brother Dafydd continued fighting for several more months. On 21 June 1283 he was captured by the Edward forces and taken as prisoner along with his family to Rhuddlan,^[112] then removed under guard to Shrewsbury, where he was tried as a traitor, hanged, drawn, cut down whilst still alive and beheaded. The six month old Llywellyn's daughter Gwenllïan of Wales was imprisoned for life at Sempringham Abbey, where she became a nun and died there, 55 years later in June 1337.

To terrorise the defeated people of England, the Anglo-Norman rulers, for the first time introduced the most torturous, brutal and inhuman punishment "hanging, drawing and quartering" mainly for those who struggled for freedom or attempted to

limit the king's authority. They were branded as “traitors” and punished in a horrible manner. Such punishment was first recorded during the reign of King Henry III (1216–1272). The convicts were severely tortured, then drawn by the tail of horse to the place of execution, where he had to lay on the block, the executioner cut down his male organ and entrails taken out through a small hole in his belly to be burned before his eyes, later his Head to be severed from his Body and his Body divided into four parts. The convict victims were allowed no witnesses or defence counsel, and was generally presumed guilty from the outset and such punishments were carried in presence of big public gatherings. The remains of the convict were often dispatched and displayed in prominent cities across the country, and his severed heads was mostly hung on London Bridge. For women convicted of high treason, they were instead burned alive at the stake.

In 1284 Edward issued the Statute of Rhuddlan that effectively annexed Wales and made it a province of England. He built a series of castles and towns in Wales settled by Anglo-Normans and imposed Anglo-Norman Law on the Welsh subjects. In 1301, the title “Prince of Wales” (along with lands across North Wales) was handed to Edward's eldest son, Prince Edward (later Edward II) – a title still granted to all first-born male heirs to the crown.

To control Ireland, Edward introduced a Parliament in Dublin, at the time most of the country was controlled by independent Barons or Celtic tribal chieftains.

Conquest of Scotland

In 1286, King Alexander of Scotland died mysteriously leaving the child Margaret of Norway as his heir. Edward had planned to marry off his son to the child queen, Margaret I of Scotland. But Margaret died on her way back to Scotland; as a result, there was no obvious heir.^[113] The Scottish nobles asked Edward to mediate between the various claimants to the throne. The two men with the best claims were John Balliol and Robert Bruce. Edward chose Balliol (over Robert Bruce). Balliol rebelled, and allied with France. Furious, Edward marched north, took Balliol prisoner, and occupied Scotland.

In 1296, Balliol declared independence, as a result Edward's army marched into Scotland, killing its inhabitants, arrested King Balliol, snatched the sacred Stone of Scone, crowned on by the Scottish kings. King Balliol was taken to the Tower of London.

To meet the war expenses in Scotland, Edward imposed taxes over the clergy in 1297. As a result Robert Winchelsey, Archbishop of Canterbury (1293-1313) obeying Pope Boniface VIII's Bull *Clericis Laicos* (1296), rejected Edward's demands, whereupon Edward outlawed the clergy.

The marriage of infant Margaret and Edward's son was signed into treaty, called the Treaty of Birgham (1286).^[114] The treaty was negotiated and signed by the Guardians of Scotland, who were ruling in the Maid of Norway's absence due to her age. Under the condition that the heiress of Scotland, Margaret, the Maid of Norway would marry King Edward's son, Scotland was to remain "separate and divided from England according to its rightful boundaries, free in itself and without subjection – even Churches of Scotland and England were to be made separate."

In 1291 Edward summoned the Scottish nobles to meet him at Norham-on-Tweed and styled himself overlord of Scotland (Lord Paramount of Scotland) and challenged claimants - [115] thirteen in all to the empty Scottish throne. The front runners were John Balliol and Robert the Bruce the Elder. Both were descendants of knights of William the Bastard. Edward compelled the nobles and the claimants to recognize his suzerainty, and only then adjudged John de Balliol as king in 1292. Although according to Celtic customs -- Robert the Bruce had a stronger claim.

By this time, Scotland, especially the Lowlands, was dominated by Anglo-Norman landowners ruling estates throughout the realm. John Balliol ran vast estates in France; Robert the Bruce the Younger owned land in Essex. The politics of the day was being handled by warlords of Norman or partial Norman blood. The common people of all Scotland and many of the lower aristocracy, the clansmen, were Celtic and still spoke Gaelic.

Balliol duly swore loyalty to Edward and was crowned at Scone, but the Scots resisted Edward's demands for military service. Balliol's position proved difficult, when Edward insisted that Scotland was not independent and he, as sovereign lord, had the right to hear in England appeals against Balliol's judgements in Scotland. King Balliol renounced his oath of allegiance and opposed Edward. He signed a mutual aid treaty in 1295 with France (later to be known as the Auld Alliance) preparing the way for war with England. This pact brought about swift retaliation from Edward.

Edward I's frequent military campaigns put a great financial strain on the nation. In 1295, when money was needed to wage war against Philip of France, Edward summoned the most comprehensive assembly ever summoned in England,[116] represented by various estates, barons, clergy, and knights and towns people. This became known as the Model Parliament that was reluctant to contribute to Edward's expensive and

unsuccessful military policies. In the end, Edward was forced to reconfirm the Charters, including Magna Carta to obtain the money he required.

In 1296, Edward invaded Scotland, forced King Balliol to abdicate. At Montrose, when the two kings confronted each other, Balliol's coat of arms was ripped from him and thrown on the floor, in front of the courtiers. At Perth, Edward commanded that the sacred Stone of Scone, upon which generations of Scots Kings had been crowned be removed and it was subsequently placed in the Coronation Chair in Westminster Abbey. Also stolen were all of Scotland's historical records, which were never recovered. Ignoring the Bruce claim, Edward appointed a trio of Anglo-Normans to run the country. Many Scots leaders were arrested and Edinburgh Castle, amongst others, was also seized. Scotland it seemed was now part of the English Empire.

In the beginning of 1298 the hope and support from France ended bitterly for the Scots. Now there was no one to defend the people of Scotland, William Wallace – a commoner, giant of a man, son of a minor local landowner, a fearless warrior raised arms and decisively defeated the Anglo-Norman army during the First War of Scottish Independence fought near Stirling Bridge on the River Forth, on September 11, 1297. By August 1297 Wallace controlled almost all of Scotland north of the Forth, except for Dundee. For the first time, commoner peasantry had defeated mounted knights. In the war, Wallace was accompanied by Andrew de Moray, who was seriously injured and subsequently died of his wounds two months later.^{[117][118]} The English lost approximately 6,000 killed and wounded, their chieftain was slain, and the remainder fled. Scots captured most of the English baggage.

After the victory at Stirling Bridge, Wallace quickly became a symbol of Scottish resistance to the Anglo-Norman occupation of Scotland. By March 1298 Wallace had emerged as Guardian of Scotland and put in sole command of the Scottish troops and the

community of the realm. In March 1298, Wallace led a punitive raid into Northumberland in the hope of forcing Edward to acknowledge defeat. At the time, Anglo-Norman England commanded the most powerful, best equipped and armed military force in all of Europe.

King Edward I received the news of defeat, when he was campaigning in Flanders against the French. After concluding a truce with the French King Philip the Fair, Edward returned to England in March 1298 and immediately began organising an army for his second invasion of Scotland. As a preliminary step he transferred his headquarters to York, where it was to remain for the next six years. A council-of-war was held in the city in April to finalise the details of the invasion. The Scots magnates were all summoned to attend, and when none appeared they were all declared to be traitors.

Edward assembled at York the largest invasion force to enter Scotland. It consisted of over 2,500 heavily armoured knights and more than 12,000 veteran foot soldiers, including 10,900 Welsh mercenaries armed with the longbow - a devastating new weapon, equal to the height of the user, as well as foot soldiers from Ireland and 500 Life Guards from Gascony.

After the Battle of Stirling Bridge, with a gap of ten months, when Edward himself advanced into central Scotland in summer 1298, Wallace withdrew into the hinterland, removing or burning all sources of food and water.[119]

On 22nd July 1298 the two armies came face to face near Falkirk, where Wallace was defeated. The estimated number of the Scottish slain is between 6,500 - 8,000 men. Wallace and a few of his supporters managed to escape and seek shelter in the woods of Callander and later Selkirk forest.

In 1304, Edward summoned a full Parliament (attended also by Scottish representatives) in which arrangements for the settlement of Scotland were made. To rule Scotland, Edward

appointed three regents, the Bishop of St. Andrews, Robert the Bruce and John, the black Comyn.

After a gap of about seven years, William Wallace was betrayed by one of his own compatriots Sir John de Menteith and who turned over him to the English authorities. He was taken as prisoner to London on August, 5, 1305, and tried in Westminster Hall as a traitor, on August, 23, 1305. Wallace was paraded, like a circus animal, through the streets of London, he became victim of many false charges including a charge for breaking his oath of fealty to King Edward, that he had never taken. Finally Wallace was whipped and dragged on a hurdle from Westminster, four miles to the Tower and from thence to a copse of elms at Smithfield. He was hanged, cut down whilst still alive, drawn - his abdomen opened by dull blades, his entrails pulled violently out and burnt before his own eyes. Later, he was beheaded. His head was impaled upon a pike and placed above the London Bridge. His remaining body was further mutilated by being quartered and sent to Newcastle, Berwick, Stirling, and Perth. In 1351, King Edward I introduced the Treason Act, thereby regularized punishment of "hanging, drawing and quartering."^[120]

The situation changed again on February 10, 1306, when Robert de Bruce murdered his rival John Comyn in the church at Greyfriars and was crowned King of Scots, on 25 March, 1306.

Bruce now embarked on a campaign to restore Scottish independence and this campaign took the English by surprise. Edward was suffering ill health by this time, and instead of leading an expedition himself, he gave military command to Aymer de Valence and Henry Percy, while the main royal army was led by the Prince of Wales. The English initially met with success; on 19 June, Aymer de Valence routed Bruce at the Battle of Methven. Bruce was forced into hiding, while the English forces recaptured their lost territory and castles.^{[121][122]}

Edward responded with severe brutality against Bruce's allies and supporters. Bruce's sister, Mary was hung in a cage outside of Roxburgh for four years. Isabella MacDuff, Countess of Buchan, who had crowned Bruce, was hung in a cage outside of Berwick Castle for four years. Bruce's younger brother Neil was executed by being hanged, drawn, and quartered; he had been captured along with Bruce's wife Elizabeth, daughter Marjorie, sisters Mary and Christina, and Isabella.

In February 1307, Bruce reappeared and started gathering men, and in May he defeated Aymer de Valence at the Battle of Loudoun Hill. Despite his failing health,^[123] on his way to reconquer Scotland, Edward I, suffering from dysentery, died at Burgh on Sands, just south of the Scottish border, at the age of sixty-eight on July 7, 1307.^[124] Edward I's body was kept at Waltham Abbey for several months before being taken for burial to Westminster, where his son Prince Edward erected a simple marble tomb for his father.

Edward II

1308 – 1326

King Edward I and his Queen Eleanor of Castile had at least fourteen children. After the death of Queen Eleanor, Edward remarried at the age of 60, to the seventeen year old Margaret, the daughter of Phillip III, King of France. Over all Edward had as many as sixteen children. Of these, five daughters survived into adulthood, but only one boy outlived Prince Edward, who was campaigning in the north, when his father King Edward I died. Prince Edward arrived after about eight months and was crowned king on February 25, 1308.

On January 25, 1308, Edward II was married to Isabella, daughter of King of France, only 12 years elder at the time of her wedding.^[125] Edward already had fathered an illegitimate son, Adam, who was born possibly as early as 1307. Edward and Isabella's first son, the future Edward III was born in 1312 amid great celebrations and three more children followed: John in 1316, Eleanor in 1318 and Joan in 1321.

King Edward had a close and controversial relationship with Piers Gaveston, one of the King's household knights. The precise nature of Edward and Gaveston's relationship is uncertain; it was alleged that Edward II was homosexual – an act that was fiercely condemned by the Church, equating it with heresy. His father King Edward I had banished Edward's lover, Piers Gaveston, "*on account of the undue intimacy*" which the young Edward had adopted towards him. At the time, it was also blamed that the King Edward and Gaveston both had sexual relationships with their wives, who bore them children; Edward may also have had an affair with his niece, Eleanor de Clare.

Later Gaveston was twice exiled at the demand of the barons, only to return England shortly afterwards. Finally Gaveston was captured and executed by the barons in 1312.

Scotland liberated

By 1314, Robert de Bruce, King of Scots had recaptured most of the castles of Scotland once held by Edward II, Stirling Castle was one of the last Anglo-Norman strongholds in Scotland that was under siege, by Edward Bruce, brother of Robert the Bruce, King of Scots.

To relieve the Stirling Castle, King Edward II issued a royal writ ordering an army to gather at Newcastle.^[126] Nearly 100 barons were summoned, to be accompanied by all the men-at-arms. The King's call was answered by Henry de Bohun, Earl of Hereford and Constable of England, the Earl of Gloucester and the Earl of Pembroke. The Scottish Earl of Angus supported Edward.^[127]

Eventually a massive army was mobilised around 2,000 cavalry and 16,000 infantrymen from England, Ireland and Wales. They had to face the Scottish army probably numbered between 7,000 warriors, led by King Robert Bruce, his brother, Edward, and his nephew, Sir Thomas Randolph, Earl of Moray.

It was the most challenging and painful moment for Robert de Bruce, when his wife, daughters and sisters were held captive in England for seven long years. Bruce brothers Neil, Thomas, and Alexander were hanged, drawn and quartered in England.

In June 1314, Edward II crossed the border only to find the road to Stirling blocked by the Scots army. For the battle site, Robert had chosen the narrow gap between the woods surrounding the Bannockburn village and those on Gillies Hill. Finally, on Sunday 23rd June 1314 Edward's army began its final march up to the Bannockburn, supported by a huge train of equipment and supplies, which included weaponry, siege engines, foods, wines, and the riches of the Knights and Barons.

In a pitched battle, the King of Scots, Robert de Bruce decisively defeated the King of England Edward II at the Battle of Bannockburn that lasted for two days, 23rd and 24th June 1314.[128] Edward fled with 500 knights, arrived eventually at Dunbar castle, from which he took ship to England. Casualties may never be fully determined, but six barons and about 200 knights had been slain along with thousands of infantry; the Earl of Gloucester, Sir Edmund de Mauley, Sir John Comyn, Sir Pain de Tiptoft, Sir Robert de Clifford, Gilbert de Clare, brother of Queen Eleanor of England among them. Others among the prisoners were Sir Marmaduke de Tweng and Sir Raoul de Monthemere. John Comyn, son of the Red Comyn (whom Bruce had murdered in 1306) was captured, along with some 70 other knights.

King Robert de Bruce returned the bodies of Gloucester and Sir Robert de Clifford to England for burial by their families. The Earl of Hereford was exchanged for King Robert's wife, daughter, Bishop Wishart and some 12 other Scots prisoners, who had been held in England captivity since 1306.

Meanwhile, Robert de Bruce raided northern England, attacking Carlisle and Berwick, and then reaching further south into Lancashire and Yorkshire, threatening even York itself.[129] At the other side, a Scottish expedition led by Robert's brother successfully invaded Ireland in 1315, where Edward Bruce declared himself the King of Ireland. After three years, Edward Bruce was finally defeated in 1318 by Edward II's Irish justiciar, Edmund Butler, at the Battle of Faughart, and Edward Bruce's decapitated head was sent back to the King Edward.

In January 1323, Andrew Harclay, the Earl of Carlisle independently negotiated a peace treaty with Robert de Bruce,[130][131] proposing that Edward would recognise Robert as the King of Scotland and that, in return, Robert would cease to interfere in England. Edward was furious and immediately executed Harclay on March 3, 1323. He was hanged, drawn and

quartered and the various parts of his body displayed in different parts of the country. Only after five years he was allowed a proper burial, but the conviction for treason was never annulled.

In June 1324, French King Charles IV declared the entire Duchy of Aquitaine forfeit to the crown, then in possession of the monarchs of England.^[132] Resulting in a War of Saint Sardos that lasted for six weeks, in which forces of England were decisively defeated by France. In desperation, King Edward ordered the arrest of any French persons in England and seized even the lands of his wife Queen Isabella, on the basis that she was of French origin and sister of the French King Charles IV.

Finally Edward sent Queen Isabella to France to negotiate terms with her brother. She left for Paris on March 9, 1325, with her twelve-year-old son Prince Edward, heir to the throne, who paid homage to the French King and the duchy was returned on September 24, 1325.

In the meantime, Isabella fell in love with Roger Mortimer – one of the rebels Baron of England. She conspired with her lover against her husband King Edward II, decided to invade and occupy England.

In October 1326, Queen Isabella, Roger Mortimer and Prince landed in Orwell on September 24, with a small force of about 1,600 mercenaries. There was virtually no resistance. King Edward attempted to raise support from within the capital, but failed. It was their family problem.

As the Edward's authority collapsed, he tried to flee along with his advisors Despensers, but was arrested in south Wales on November 16, 1326. Edward was placed in captivity and later forced to abdicate in favour of his son Prince Edward.

Edward III

1326 - 1377

Prince Edward's father King Edward II was overthrown by his wife Queen Isabella with the assistance of her lover Roger Mortimer on November 16, 1326. King Edward II was placed in captivity and later forced to abdicate in favour of his son Prince Edward, who was crowned as Edward III, aged 14. Queen Isabella and her lover Roger Mortimer took over the administration

On September 21, 1327 King Edward III was informed that his father had died at Berkeley Castle.[133] According to accepted belief, Edward was murdered in a cruel manner following the orders of the Queen Isabella and the Regent Roger Mortimer.[134] A red hot poker was inserted into his entrails by means of a horn, to leave no outward marks on his body. The people of Berkeley were said to have heard the agonized screams of the dying king outside the castle. Edward II was interred at Gloucester Cathedral, the funeral was attended by Isabella and the new king Edward III. Edward's heart was removed, placed in a silver container, and later buried with Isabella at Newgate Church in London.[135]

Hugh Despenser the Elder, close associate of the deceased King Edward II was hanged in his armour at Bristol on October 27, 1326. His body was cut into pieces for the dogs. His head dispatched for display in Winchester, they had supported the king. At the other side, Walter Stapeldon, the Bishop of Exeter, king's associate was murdered in the mob violence.

Hugh le Despenser the younger, aged 40 tried to starve himself to death in prison.[136] However, he was brought before the Queen and Roger Mortimer for trial on November 24, 1326, in Hereford. Hugh was declared a traitor and a thief, sentenced to

public execution by hanging, as a thief, and drawing and quartering as a traitor. Additionally, he was sentenced to be 'disemboweled' for creating disagreement between the King and Queen. During trial, Hugh was not permitted to speak in his defence.

Immediately after the trial, Hugh le Despenser was dragged probably by four horses through the streets to his place of execution, where a great fire was lit. Queen Isabella and Roger Mortimer watched the execution in public gathering. Hugh was hanged from a gallows 50 ft (15 m) high; his sex organ sliced off and his entrails slowly pulled out (still alive). Finally his heart was cut out and thrown into the fire.^[137] Later his corpse was cut into four pieces and sent to various places. His head was parboiled in salt water and mounted on the gates of London; his limbs sent to Bristol, York, Dover and Newcastle. Hugh's widow Eleanor de Clare was imprisoned in the Tower of London. Three of Hugh's five daughters, Joan, Eleanor and Margaret were forcibly veiled as nuns, by the Queen Isabella's direct orders.

Four years later, in December 1330, widow of Hugh the Younger was given permission to gather and bury his remains at their estate, but only the head, a thigh bone and a few vertebrae were returned to her.

After Hugh, his loyal fellow captive, Simon of Reading was hanged for having allegedly insulted the Queen. He was simply hung until dead. Edward's former chancellor, Robert Baldock, died in Fleet Prison; the Earl of Arundel was also beheaded.

By 1330, relations between Mortimer and the young Edward III became strained and the King conducted *a coup d'état at Nottingham Castle*. He arrested Mortimer and then executed him on fourteen charges of treason, including the murder of his father Edward II. The King spared his mother Isabella.^{[138][139][140][141]}

In 1328, when King Charles IV died without a male heir, Queen Isabella of England claimed the throne of France for her son King Edward III. She was sister of the French King. At the time, widow of the French king, Joan of Evreux was pregnant therefore the entire French nation had to wait until she could give birth to a son who would become king of France. To run the affairs of the Estate of France, Philip of Valois, cousin of the King Charles IV was appointed Regent of France.

On April 1, 1328, Joan gave birth to a daughter, subsequently the assemblies of the French barons and prelates and the University of Paris decided in favour of Philip of Valois, the eldest grandson of Philip III of France through the male line, who was crowned as King of France on May 29, 1328 at the Cathedral, in Reims. Edward's claim was rejected following the ancient Salic Law. Subsequently Edward blasted and prepared to invade France.

In 1337, King Edward III declared himself rightful heir to the French throne, setting the stage for the Hundred Years' War. At the time, both England and France were "personal Estates" of its monarchs. The entire Estate or its parts could be gifted or given in dowry to any person of their choice along with its inhabitants – simply a living creatures, branded as subjects or slaves - they were conditionally allowed to live and survive within the territory owned by the kings or queens, against payment of taxes as well as to hand over their young sons to be consumed exclusively in wars of conquests.

After military might, "marriages" also became another major weapon for obtaining vast lands. The Norman rulers of England took full advantage of this system and became masters of half of the territory of France. In May 1337, Philip of France confiscated the Duchy of Aquitaine and country of Ponthieu – a territory possessed by the monarchs of England, thereby inaugurating the first major battle of the Hundred Years' War. In February 1340,

Edward III was officially crowned King of France in a ceremony held in the city of Ghent.[142]

Now to conquer France by force, King Edward III sailed from Orwell on June 22, 1340, with a fleet of 200 ships reached the Flemish coast, where he was joined by his Admiral of the North Sea, Sir Robert Morley, with a further fleet of 50 ships.[143] King Edward had with him the household of his Queen.

To counter the Edward, King Philip VI of France assembled estimated around 213 ships commanded by Hugues Quieret, Admiral of France and Nicolas Behuchet, treasurer for the King of France. The violent battle was fought in and around the harbour of Sluys on June 24, 1340. Finally France suffered a grave defeat and its navy was almost completely destroyed. After defeat, the French knights, soldiers and sailors jumped or were thrown into the sea, drowning under the weight of their armaments. The sea water was reported to be thick with blood and corpses. As with all medieval battles casualties are hard to calculate with precision. It seems likely that the casualties were in the tens of thousands. The French probably lost every ship other than Bocanegra's galleys. Of the French commanders Hugues Quieret was killed and Nicolas Behuchet captured and hanged by Edward III. Naval forces of Edward suffered a few thousand casualties. The victory at Sluys gave the control of the Channel to Edward for remainder of the war and allowed to attack France at will. In July 1340, Edward was forced to withdraw his forces after heavy losses and the death of his field commander Robert III of Artois at the Battle of Saint-Omer fought at Artois (France).

The Hundred Years' War continued and in July 1346, King Edward again landed on the coast of Normandy with a fleet of 750 ships guarded by 16,000 Anglo-Norman, Welsh and allied mercenaries from the Holy Roman Empire.. King Edward's sixteen-year-old son, Prince Edward of Woodstock was with him. They marched south to Caen, the capital of Normandy,

plundering the French countryside, killing thousands of innocent men, women and children, taking prisoner the Constable of France, Raoul, count of Eu. At the other side, one more Edward's army landed in South Western France at Bordeaux, to invade the province of Aquitaine. Learning of the Edward's arrival, French King Philip halted Edward at the village of Crecy with a force of approximately 25,000 mounted knights and 4,000 hired Genoese crossbowmen. At the time, most of the populations of France were dying of plague - Black Death. By 1348, one third population of France died, including Queen of France, Joan of Burgundy during 1349.

However, on August 26, 1346, Edward's army annihilated French force at the Battle of Crecy.^{[144][145]} Nearly a third of French army lay slain on the field. Those killed during the war including King Philip's brother, Charles II of Alencon (1297-1346); his allies King John of Bohemia who was also titular King of Poland (1296-1346); Louis of Nevers (1304-46), Rudolph, Duke of Lorraine (1320-1346), Louis II, Count of Blois (slain in 1346) and Louis I, Count of Flanders (1304 - 1346). In addition eight other counts and three archbishops were slain along with some 1,500 other knights. Philip him self was wounded but survived. English losses were considerably lower. After the battle, next day, the Black Prince, according to tradition, adopted the emblem of the King of Bohemia, the three white feathers, and his motto "Ich Dien" (I serve); still the emblem of the Prince of Wales.

King Edward III then marched his army north to Calais and besieged the town. The city surrendered in October of the same year (1346), Edward ejected most of its French inhabitants, colonizing the town with Anglo-Normans and establishing there a base from which to conduct further invasions on France. The city was held by England for nearly two centuries.

In October 1347, King Edward returned to England from France. He celebrated his triumph, when the people of England also

were dying of plague, known as the Black Death that raged until the end of 1353. Within first 2 years roughly 40% population of England died. In all of Europe, one third of its population or around 50 million people died in the Black Death during 1348-49.

In England, it has been estimated that 40% of its clergy died. The high rate of mortality led to a shortage of priests in many parts of the country.^{[147][148]} As a result, many people were dying without last rites and without having a chance to confess their sins. Pope Clement VI was forced to grant remission of sins to all who died of the plague without benefit of clergy. Subsequently, people were allowed to confess their sins to one another, or "even to a woman." In 1348, King Edward III's young daughter Joan was on her way to marry Pedro of Castile. In the meantime, she was infected and died of plague on July 1, 1348. For various reasons women and children suffer higher incidence of mortality from plague than adult men. With the death of farmers and labourers on large scale, hundreds of villages became quite deserted with no one left in the houses. With the shortage of labourers, wages and prices rose. Through Ordinances of Labourers (1349) and the Statute of Labourers of 1351, efforts were made to control the wages and prices.

Under such a miserable situation, the warmonger monarchs of England were not prepared to halt their war activities. In 1359, Edward's eldest son, Edward the Black Prince captured the French king, John II and his youngest son Philip, during the battle of Poitiers fought on September 19, 1359. The outnumbered French forces were routed and the French central government had almost totally collapsed. By the Treaty of London, signed in 1359, King John II was forced to surrender nearly half of France to Edward III.

But the French Estate General repudiated the Treaty of London on 25 May, 1359. As a result, King Edward landed at Calais and on October 28, 1359 besieged Reims - the coronation city of the

kings of France, in order to legitimate his claims. But Reims fiercely resisted and Edward was forced to leave Reims. Exhausted by an inconclusive expedition and tired of this long period of war, Edward III accepted French proposals to reopen negotiations at Bretigny.[149][150]

On May 25, 1360, the Treaty of Bretigny was signed at Bretigny, a village near Chartres by King Edward III of England and King John of France. By virtue of this treaty, the captive King of France ceded extensive territories in northwestern France to England besides Guyenne and Gascony, Poitou, Saintonge and Aunis, Agenais, Perigord, Limousin, Quercy, Bigorre, the countship of Gaure, Angoumois, Rouergue, Montreuil sur Mer, Ponthieu, Calais, Sangatte, Ham and the countship of Guines. The king of England was to hold these territories free and clear, without doing homage for them to the King of France.

In return, the King of England renounced all claims to the French throne and gave up the duchy of Touraine, the countships of Anjou and Maine and the suzerainty of Brittany and Flanders. As a result the first phase of the Hundred Years' War ended.

For the release of King John II of France, three million gold crowns as ransom were fixed payable to the King Edward of England.[151] He was to be released on payment of one million. As a guarantee for the rest of ransom amount, King John handed over two of his sons as hostages along with several princes and nobles, four inhabitants of Paris, and two citizens from each of the nineteen principal towns of France. This treaty was ratified by both of the elder sons of both the kings on October 24, 1360, at Calais. At the same time both the kings abandoned their rights over the territory they had yielded to one another. Edward III retired finally to England, for the last time. These were the days when the plague again returned to England in 1361, lasted for two years until 1362 and killed further around 20% population.

In 1362, Louis I, Duke of Anjou, one of the hostages escaped from England.^{[152][153]} As a result fearful King John II of France returned back to England and surrendered himself. He could not raise further the ransom amount at home. However, King John II of France died in captivity in England during 1364; subsequently he was succeeded by Charles V as king of France.

These were the days, when, instead of French, the Parliament of England was opened for the first time in English, after a gap of about 350 years. In 1362, through Statute of Pleading, English language of the Anglo-Saxon invaders was recognized as a court language. Whilst the Celtic, mother tongue and lingua franca of the masses of England was deliberately ignored.

In 1369, King Charles V of France repudiated the terms of the Treaty of Bretigny and asserted control over their lost territory. Shocked by the French initiative, Edward III reasserted his French claims and the war started again. But by 1375, Edward's possessions in France were reduced to only the coastal towns of Calais, Bordeaux and Bayonne.

After the death of Queen Philippa in 1369, King Edward III, aged 57, created sex relations with Alice Perrers, aged 21, who had served as a lady-in-waiting to Queen Philippa. Alice Perrers gave birth to three illegitimate children by Edward III, a son named Sir John de Southeray (c. 1364-1383), who married Maud Percy, daughter of Henry Percy, 3rd Baron Percy; two of his daughters, Jane married Richard Northland, and Joan to Robert Skerne. In between 1369 - 71, the plague again recurred and took further 10% population of England. On June 8, 1376, the Black Prince, elder son of the king died leaving his 10 year old son as the heir to the English throne.

The king Edward III, after fifty years of reign died of a stroke on June 21, 1377 and was buried in Westminster Abbey. He was succeeded by his grandson Richard - the eldest surviving son of the Black Prince.

Richard II

1377 - 1399

At the age of 10, Richard II succeeded his grandfather King Edward III who ruled for fifty years. While claiming the throne of France, Edward III trapped both the two nations in the Hundred Years' War. Edward annihilated a third of French army at the Battle of Crecy and the Black Prince (Richard's father) captured the French King John II and his youngest son, Philip during the Battle of Poitiers fought in 1356.

When Richard II was crowned as King of England on July 16, 1377,[154] more than one third population of England was already dead due to plague - the Black Death. On the other hand, a large segment of young generation of England was made fodder of nonstop wars carried by Edward III. Thousands were crippled, died of hunger and diseases. The economy of England had completely collapsed. Such England was inherited by the young Richard II, controlled by his uncle, John of Gaunt, with all the reins of power.

Under such severe conditions, the Parliament of England (Fund raising Agency for the monarchs of England), granted permission to impose the Poll Tax in November 1380 for the third time higher than before, so as to cover heavy expenses incurred due to the series of the Hundred Years' War. Everyone above fifteen years age was required to pay Poll Tax, at a time when the people of England were dying of plague, unable to bury their dead, facing short of food. [155]

As soon as the Poll Tax was enforced, there was a cry all over the kingdom that led to the outbreak of the 'Peasants Revolt' in 1381 headed by Wat Tyler, John Ball and Jack Straw. The revolt started in Kent and Essex in late May. In desperation, a tax collector Wat Tyler was killed in Kent. As a result, thousands of

peasants arrived from different towns and villages with sticks, scythes and flails and moved along with Wat Tyler to London. On the way more peasants joined them. Subsequently a multitude of angry peasants came pouring into London, where worst of them burnt down the Savoy Palace of John of Gaunt. They also seized the Lord Chancellor, Archbishop Simon of Canterbury and cut off his head, who was one of the king's advisers. Even king's Lord High Treasurer Robert Hales was also killed.

In such a risky and dangerous situation, the young King Richard, aged 14, was allowed to approach the mob gathered at Mile End, Smithfield. King set out by horse and met their leader Wat Tyler. While negotiations were on, William Walworth, Mayor of London killed Wat Tyler at Smithfield. Subsequently the situation became worse. Immediately the forces of Walworth surrounded the peasants, but the King Richard granted clemency and allowed the peasants to return to their homes. But disturbances continued in other parts of the kingdom. King Richard went personally into Essex to suppress the revolt. On June 28, Richard defeated the last mob at Billericay and effectively ended the Peasants' Revolt. Later the king annulled the pardons.

On January 20, 1382, King Richard II married to Anne of Bohemia, daughter of the Holy Roman Emperor, King of Bohemia Charles IV.

In 1383, King Richard aged 16, made Michael de la Pole as Lord Chancellor (Earl of Suffolk) and elevated Robert De Vere, Earl of Oxford, to the new title, Duke of Ireland in 1386. Both emerged as the king's 'favourite.' It is said that the relationship between the king and De Vere was of a homosexual nature. King Richard was a tall, considered the "most beautiful" with a "feminine face" lacking manliness.

It was the main job of the monarchs of England to wage wars and the barons, earls, duke and others, owner of all the

landholdings of England were bound to provide funds as well as the young sons of the soil for making them fodder of wars. Simultaneously the Parliament of England had to play a role of Fund Raising Agency for the king.

In 1385, Richard led an invasion of Scotland with a force of 14,000 warriors, a quarter of whom were provided by John of Gaunt. The Scottish administration, unable to match this force, retreated and refused to be drawn into battle, leaving Richard to burn the border abbeys and depart without gain.

In 1387, at the age of 22, King Richard decided to enjoy full powers and authorized his lover Robert De Vere to eliminate the group of Lord Appellant^[156] – physically the rulers of England. As a result, there was a war between the forces of De Vere and the Lord Appellant. King's lover De Vere was defeated at Radcot Bridge on December 20, 1387, who escaped to France along with the Lord Chancellor, Michael de la Pole. Subsequently England was ruled again by the Lord Appellant.

In 1388, the Lord Appellant called the “Merceless Parliament” to eliminate king's supporters and favourites: the Lord Chief Justice Sir Robert Tresilian and Sir Nicholas Brembre, Lord Mayor of London were hanged alongwith four knights. Sir James Berners, Sir John Salisbury and John Beauchamp of Holt were beheaded. Even the king's tutor, Sir Simon Burley was hanged. At the time, King Richard and the Queen both were helpless.

The Lords Appellant continued to rule England under the leadership of Thomas of Woodstock until May 3, 1389 when they stepped down and surrendered control of the kingdom back to Richard. Same year in November, John of Gaunt, uncle and supporter of Richard returned from Spain and took control of England for over a decade until 1397, when King Richard finally reasserted his authority. He was fully prepared to revenge the Lords Appellants' group.

In 1396, Richard got married to Isabella, seven years old daughter of Charles VI, King of France. King Richards' first wife Anne of Bohemia died in 1394. In dowrey Isabella brought a huge amount of £83,000.

In September 1397, Richard arrested his uncle, Thomas of Woodstock, leader of the Lords Appellant, also Duke of Gloucester.[157] He was murdered during captivity in Calais; it was widely believed that the Duke of Gloucester was killed on Richard's orders. The Earl of Arundel, Richard FitzAlan was condemned and beheaded on September 21, 1397. Warwick's life was spared, but he and his wife were exiled for life to the Isle of Man. Thomas Arundel, archbishop of Canterbury, was also exiled.

In October 1394, Richard invaded Ireland with the largest force ever brought to the island. A number of Irish chieftains submitted to the overlordship of England.[158][159] Again in May 1395, Richard landed in Ireland that virtually had submitted to his rule.

In December 1397, situation turned around when Richard exiled his cousin Henry Bolingbroke (later Henry IV) son of John of Gaunt for ten years. On February 3, 1399, John of Gaunt died. Instead of allowing Henry Bolingbroke to succeed his father, Richard extended his exile to life and had him disinherited.[160]

In May 1399, Richard again had to invade Ireland where his cousin, the governor, Roger Mortimer, had been killed by the Irish. While Richard was away in Ireland, Henry Bolingbroke invaded England by the end of June 1399, with a small force that quickly grew in numbers. He landed at Ravenspur in Yorkshire and moved south.[161] Kings' uncle Edmund of Langley, Duke of York was acting as keeper of the realm, had little choice but to side with Henry Bolingbroke.

On hearing of Henry's arrival, King Richard returned from Ireland in haste. He made his way to Conwy, met with the Earl

of Northumberland for negotiations on August 12, 1399. After one week, Richard was arrested on August 19 along with Queen Isabella.^[162] They were imprisoned in the Tower of London. Finally Richard was forced to abdicate if he wished to save his life. On September 29, Henry Bolingbroke summoned a Parliament in his adversary's name, and on the following day the king's statement of abdication was read in Parliament and approved. When the proceedings were concluded, Richard was taken from the Tower to Leeds and later to Pontefract, where Richard, aged 33 was probably murdered during captivity or starved to death in around February 14, 1400.^[163] Before burial, his body was put on public display in the old St Paul's Cathedral on February 17, and was buried in Kings Langley Church on March 6, 1400. Henry Bolingbroke proclaimed himself king and took the throne as Henry IV.

Henry IV

1399 to 1413

King Richard II was murdered or starved to death by his cousin Henry Bolingbroke,^[163] who was crowned as King Henry IV on October 13, 1399. He, for the first time addressed the Parliament in English, instead of French, after about 342 years following the Norman Conquest of England in 1066. Henry was also declared Lord of Ireland and the so-called king of France as asserted by his grandfather Edward III.

King Charles VI of France requested for the release of her daughter Isabella, former Queen of England, wife of the deceased King Richard II, along with her dowry. In 1401, she was allowed to return to France where she married to a poet Charles, Duke of Orleans in 1406.

Since Henry had usurped the throne and was considered a killer of King Richard II, therefore his reign remained almost in suspicious circumstances. Many of his leading supporters, who played a major role in getting Henry IV the throne deserted and revolted against him and the situation prevailed continuously for first of his 10 years.

In 1400, after a long century of subjugation of the British crown, the Welsh people declared independence under Owain Glyndwr (c. 1349 or 1359 – c. 1415) who emerged as a national hero. To crush the Welsh independence, King Henry IV declared war on the Welsh people, dispatched a large force headed by his cousin Sir Edmund Mortimer that arrived in Wales during early October. Side by side, King Henry introduced draconian legislation against the Welsh people; they were no longer allowed to hold public office, disbanded Welsh-language writers

and singers, marriages in between the Welsh and Anglo-Normans were outlawed; not even allowed to have overnight guests.

Finally there was a fierce 'Battle of Bryn Glas' fought on June 22, 1402, near the towns of Knighton. The battle was one of the greatest Welsh victories and the forces of England were decisively defeated, Sir Edmund Mortimer himself was captured, who was strong claimant to the throne of England. Henry made no effort to ransom him. Among those killed during the war were Sir Walter Devereaux of Weobley, and Sir Robert Whitney, Henry's Knight-Marshal.^{[164][165]}

Once Wales declared independence, the Welsh students studying in the Oxford and Cambridge Universities leaving their studies returned to their independent mother-land. The Welsh labourers and craftsmen abandon their employers in England and arrived in Wales. Even Welsh scholars along with hundreds of Welsh archers and experienced men-at-arms left services in England to serve their own independent Welsh nation.

In 1404, Owain Glyndwr convened the first Parliament of Wales at Machynlleth, attended by delegates from all over Wales, four representatives from every 'commote' (Welsh administrative district) and the session was graced by envoys from Scotland, France and Spain. In this parliament Glyndwr was proclaimed the Prince of Wales. In the meantime Sir Edmund Mortimer renounced his allegiance to King Henry IV and negotiated an alliance with Owain, subsequently married Glyndwr's daughter Catherine.

In between 1400 to 1405, Henry led a number of fruitless expeditions into Wales pressurizing Parliament all the time for funding his wars and the Parliament repeatedly accused him of fiscal mismanagement.

In 1406 Glyndwr called another parliament, this time at Pennal where it was decided to establish two Welsh universities so that the Welsh citizens may not depend on England for their education. It was also announced to return to the traditional Welsh Law of Hywel Dda and for independent Welsh church. In his famous 'Pennal Letter,' Glyndwr wrote to the King of France, offering his support for the French Pope Benedict XIII in exchange for the independence of the Welsh church, with a guarantee that only men who spoke Welsh would be appointed bishops and priests in Wales and all the Welsh monetary grants to monasteries and colleges in England would end.

In 1403, the most influential Percys family (Hotspur) revolted against Henry IV, joined the Welsh leader Owain Glyndwr and supported King Henry IV's cousin, Sir Edmund Mortimer, claimant to the throne of England. Previously they supported Henry IV in usurping the throne of England and in return Henry IV appointed Henry Percy Hotspur (his cousin), son of the Earl of Northumberland, as his principal lieutenant and justiciar in North Wales.

However, Henry Percy Hotspur, 1st Earl of Northumberland publicly renounced their allegiance to King Henry IV, accusing the king of 'tyrannical rule'. In 1403, Percy Hotspur raised around 14,000 warriors and prepared for the final round with the King Henry IV. Subsequently a fierce war was fought at the Battle of Shrewsbury on July, 23 1403 where thousands of warriors were dead at both the sides. Hotspur Percy was decisively defeated and killed by the forces of King Henry IV, led by his 16-year old son Prince Henry (later Henry V) who was also severely wounded during the battle. An arrow was shot that stuck in his face. However, he survived. With the death of Hotspur the battle came to abrupt end. Thomas Percy, 1st Earl of Worcester, Sir Richard Venables, baron of Kinderton and Sir Richard Vernon were publicly hanged, drawn and quartered and their heads displayed.^[166] The Earl of Northumberland fled to Scotland. The body of Percy Hotspur was recovered and

quartered, put on display in Chester, London, Bristol and Newcastle. His head was impaled on a pike at the gates of York. The head of the Earl of Worcester was set up on a spike on London Bridge.

In 1408, after a gap of about five years, father of Percy Hotspur (1341 - 1408), the old man, Earl of Northumberland once again attempted to revenge the death of his eldest son and depose King Henry IV. He had raised large army, assisted by the Scottish allies invaded Northern England. After heavy losses, the Earl of Northumberland was defeated and killed by the forces of Henry IV, during the Battle of Shrewsbury fought on February 19, 1408.^[167] His head was severed and carried on a spear in procession through the towns en route to London, where it was exhibited on the bridge as a "monument to divine Justice." Other sixteen prisoners were also hanged, drawn and quartered and their severed heads were sent to London along with the head of Lord Bardolf, who died on the battlefield from his wounds. Many executions and fines followed when Henry himself arrived in York.

In the meantime, King Henry had defeated the Scots and turned his full attention to the Wales.^[168] He marched a large army across North Wales, burning and looting without mercy. Whole populations scrambled for peace. At the other side, his young son Prince Henry retook many of the castles in South Wales. Glyndwr nevertheless continued the uprising throughout North and Central Wales for a few more years.

In 1409, Owain's wife Margaret along with two of his daughters (including Cathrine) and three of Mortimer's granddaughters were arrested and imprisoned in the Tower of London. They were all to die in the Tower before 1415. In 1410, Glyndwr son of Owain launched a raid on the Shropshire border which resulted in three of his leading supporters being captured and executed; these included his cousin Rhys ap Tudur of Penmynydd in

Anglesey who was executed in Chester. Glyndwr also was captured, who died in the Tower of London during 1412.[169]

After 1412, nothing is recorded of Owain - liberator of the Welsh nation. He remained elusive, disappearing into the hills, continually evading capture. He is believed to have spent his last years in Herefordshire near the manor of his son-in-law, Sir John Scudamore, possibly dying around 1416. The location of his grave is unknown. Owain Glyndwr was the last native Welsh person to hold the title Prince of Wales.

In his play, William Shakespeare portrays Owain Glyndwr as a wild, exotic, magical and spiritual man, playing up the romantic 'Celtic' traits. One of the most heroic figures in Welsh history, Owain acquired a mythical status, as the hero awaiting the call to return and liberate Welsh people.

The last years of Henry's reign were marked by serious health problems.[170] He had a disfiguring skin disease and, more seriously, suffered acute attacks of some grave illness. The skin disease might have been Leprosy, perhaps psoriasis, or some other disease. Henry died in the Jerusalem Chamber in the abbot's house of Westminster Abbey, on March 20, 1413. He was not buried at Canterbury Cathedral, in the Trinity Chapel.[171]

Henry V

1413 - 1422

After his father's death in 1413, Henry assumed control of the kingdom and decided immediately to war with France in the ongoing Hundred Years' War, started in 1337.[172][173]

To create reason for war with France, Henry claimed the remaining ransom amount of 1.6 million crowns payable by the King John II of France, who died in captivity in England. He also claimed his ownership over the lands of Normandy, Touraine, Anjou, Brittany, Flanders and Aquitaine - roughly half of France.

Henry also offered to marry the French Princess Catherine, the young daughter of Charles VI, King of France, if she brings a dowry of 2 million crowns.

The French responded with what they considered the generous terms of marriage with Princess Catherine, a dowry of 600,000 crowns, along with the territory of Aquitaine. But Henry rejected.

In December 1414, the Parliament was persuaded by Henry V to provide funds for war with France by imposing "double tax", twice the traditional rate, for war with France. Henry again asked the Parliament on April 19, 1415 to provide more funds.

While claiming the title of King of France, Henry V landed in northern France on August 13, 1415, carrying a fleet of 1,500 ships.[174] He besieged the port of Harfleur with about 12,000 warriors and up to 20,000 horses. The residents of the town resisted for more than one month and finally surrendered on

September 22. Then Henry moved to the port of Calais through Normandy.

The French assembled at Rouen with 8,000 warriors, 4,000 archers and 1,500 crossbowmen. King Charles VI did not command the French army himself as he suffered from severe repeating illnesses and moderate mental incapacitation. Instead, the French were commanded by Constable Charles d'Albret assisted by various prominent French noblemen. They blocked Henry's way to Calais. Finally the battle was fought on Friday, October 25, 1415 in the narrow strip of open land formed between the woods of Tramecourt and Agincourt, close to the modern village of Azincourt.^[175]

Henry was directly involved in the hand-to-hand fighting. Upon hearing that his youngest brother Humphrey,^[176] Duke of Gloucester, had been wounded in the groin, Henry took his household guard and stood over his brother, in the front rank of the fighting, until Humphrey could be dragged to safety. The king received an axe blow to the head which knocked off a piece of the crown that formed part of his helmet.

The French men-at-arms were taken prisoner or killed in thousands. The fighting lasted about three hours, but eventually the leaders of the second line were killed or captured, as those of the first line had been. In any event, Henry ordered the slaughter of what were perhaps several thousand French prisoners, sparing only the most high ranked (presumably those most likely to fetch a large ransom under the chivalric system of warfare). The French lost all hope of victory and promptly fled the battlefield.

The French sources said, 4,000–10,000 French dead, with up to 1,600 English dead. However the French lost six times more men than the English. The English sources vary between about 1,500 and 11,000 for the French dead, for English dead they put at no more than 100. Barker identifies from the available records "at

least" 112 Englishmen killed in the fighting, including Edward of Norwich, 2nd duke of York, a grandson of Edward III.

The French suffered heavily. Three Dukes, at least eight counts, a viscount and an archbishop died, along with numerous other nobles. Of the great royal office holders, France lost her Constable, Admiral, Master of the Crossbowmen. Estimates of the number of prisoners vary between 700 and 2,200, amongst them the Duke of Orleans (the famous poet Charles d'Orleans) and Jean Le Maingre (known as Boucicault) Marshal of France. Almost all these prisoners were spared for ransom, only the less valuable prisoners were slaughtered. The battle was won by Henry V. Approximately 7000 French lay dead - the English only lost a few hundred.

Under such critical situation, Queen of France, Isabeau of Bavaria intervened and agreed to follow the terms acceptable to Henry V. Subsequently, the Treaty of Troyes was signed in the French city of Troyes on May 21, 1420, under which it was agreed that King Henry V of England and his heirs would inherit the throne of France upon the death of King Charles VI of France. The treaty arranged for the marriage of Charles VI's daughter Catherine of Valois to Henry V, who was made Regent of France and acknowledged (along with his future sons) as successor to the French throne. The Dauphin Charles VII of France (son of King Charles VI) was disinherited from the succession. The Estate-General of France also ratified the agreement.[177]

On June 2, 1420, King Henry V married to Catherine of Valois daughter of King Charles VI of France aged 20, who became Queen of England. On December 6, 1421 a son was born to Henry at Windsor Castle, known as Prince Henry VI. At the time King Henry was still campaigning in France.

Whilst laying seige to Meaux, France, Henry caught dysentery and died at a young age of 35 on August 31, 1422, subsequently his young wife Queen Catherine became widow at an age of 21.

After the death of Henry V, within less than two months, Charles VI of France also died on October 21, 1422. As a result, the infant Henry VI aged 9 months was declared King of England and France, following the Treaty of Troyes of 1420.

Upon the the death of Charles VI in 1422, his son Dauphin Charles claimed the throne of France, but was opposed thoroughly by combined forces of England, Burgandy and Brittany. France was on her way to become a colony of England, By virtue of conquest it had come under the servitude of the monarchs of England. The last remaining parts of France were being conquered by the forces of England and Burgundy. Such situation prevailed continuously for over two decades. In 1429, a young girl aged 17, named Joan of Arc approached one of the French garrison commanders, Robert de Baudricourt, informed him that she had been designated by Saint Margaret, Saint Catherine and Saint Michael to expel the invading forces of England, liberate France and install Charles Dauphin as its king. At first, Baudricourt refused, but when she repeated her version with full confidence, he gave her a horse and an escort of several soldiers.

Joan was from a peasant family, owning about 50 acres (20 hectares) of land, in a village of Domremy in north-east France. She cropped her hair and dressed in men's clothes for her 11-day journey across enemy territory to Chinon, the site of Charles Dauphin's court.[178]

On her arrival in Chinon, Charles reluctantly agreed to meet the peasant girl. He, along with members of his court, listened to Joan of Arc with patient but found no reason to believe her. Joan professed to Charles that in four months time he would be crowned as King of France in the cathedral at Reims. These were the days when the city of Orleans, loyal to Charles was placed under siege by some 5,500 forces of England assisted by the Burgundians since October 12, 1428. Charles, as a test point, assigned her the first job to break the siege of Orleans. He

provided Joan, armor, a horse and she led a force and moved to Orleans on April 27, 1429.

On May 7, Joan was able to enter Orleans through its eastern gate, but was suddenly hit by an arrow in her shoulder and she collapsed. According to reports, Joan pulled the arrow out herself and, despite severe injury, returned to the fight. On May 8, while leading the French forces, Joan of Arc routed the Anglo-Norman forces and the siege of Orleans ended within ten days of her arrival. The Earl of Suffolk and Lord Talbot fighting for England were taken prisoner by the French.

During the next five weeks, Joan led French forces into a number of stunning victories over the Anglo-Normans and Burgundians. Finally, Charles Dauphin along with Joan of Arc entered Reims and was crowned as King Charles VII of France on July 17, 1429. Joan fulfilled her commitment and the French nation then morally depressed came out of fear, frustration and terror. Joan of Arc turned the wars of independence for France against England into a similar spirit of the Crusade Wars.

On May 23, 1430, while fighting with the Burgundians in a move to liberate Compiegne in northern France, Joan was pulled from her horse and captured by the forces of Philip III,[179] Duke of Burgundy and imprisoned at Beaurevoir Castle. She attempted several escapes; on one occasion jumping from her 70-foot (21 m) tower, landing on the soft earth of a dry moat. She was captured and shifted the Burgundian town of Arras. Finally, the Burgundians sold Joan to the authorities of England against a ransom of 10,000 francs.

King Charles VII of France, being a coward person immediately distanced himself and made no attempt to rescue Joan who was handed over the church officials to be tried as a heretic. Instead of being held in a church prison with nuns as guards, she was held in a military prison. Joan was threatened with rape and torture, though there is no record that either actually occurred. She protected herself by tying her soldiers' clothes tightly

together with dozens of cords. Between February 21 and March 24, 1431, Joan was interrogated nearly a dozen times by a tribunal. Finally she was charged for witchcraft, heresy and dressing like a man.

On May 29, 1431, the tribunal announced Joan of Arc – liberator of France, guilty of heresy. On the morning of May 30, she was taken to the marketplace in Rouen and burned alive at the stake, before a crowd of thousands of people. At the time, she was 19 years old. Her ashes were gathered and scattered in the river Seine.

Henry VI

King of England from 1422 to 1461

again from 1470 to 1471

Disputed King of France from 1422 to 1453.

King Henry V, conqueror of France died suddenly at a young age of 35, on August 31, 1422.^[180] Subsequently his lone nine-month old son was acknowledged as king of England who was crowned as Henry VI on November 6, 1429 at Westminster Abbey.^[181] Again on December 26, 1431, King Henry VI was also crowned as King of France, at Notre Dame Cathedral in Paris, whilst Reims was the ceremonial city where all the French kings were crowned.^{[182][183][184]} On July 17, 1429, Charles Dauphin, son of Charles VI of France was already crowned in Reims as Charles VII, King of France, following the prophecy and struggle of Joan of Arc. Joan further professed that the forces of England would be expelled and France would become an independent kingdom. On May 29, 1431 Joan of Arc was burned alive at the

stake. On July 7, 1456, the Appellate Court declared Joan of Arc innocent and a martyr.[185]

However, to govern both England and parts of France until Henry come of age, a Regency Council was established headed by one of Henry V's brothers, John, Duke of Bedford. He was made responsible for the ongoing war in France. Henry V's other surviving brother, Humphrey, Duke of Gloucester was made Protector and Defender of the Realm. Henry V's half-uncle Henry Beaufort, Bishop of Winchester was also given some important place in the Council.

Queen Catherine aged, 21 widow of Henry V lived in the king's Windsor Castle to care for her son. In the meantime, she entered into a sexual relationship with Welshman Owen Tudor, most likely her Wardrobe Clerk. Subsequently she became pregnant. There is no clear evidence either way whether Catherine and Owen Tudor actually married. No documentation of such a marriage exists. However, Owen and Catherine had at least six children.

On September 21, 1435, the situation completely turned around, when Philip the Good, Duke of Burgundy the main ally of England recognized Charles VII as King of France.[186] As a result, English occupation in France underwent steady decline. On April 13, 1436, the long occupation of Paris ended when the city was recovered by the French from the forces of England.

In 1437, at the age of 16, Henry assumed full royal powers.[187] Instead of War with France, Henry decided to educate his nation.[188] In 1438, King Henry VI founded All Souls College, Oxford that was planned and built in 1430 by Henry Chichele, Archbishop of Canterbury. In 1440, Henry founded Eton College at Cambridge and in 1441 King's College, Cambridge.

At the age of 23, King Henry initiated to marry fifteen-year-old Margaret of Anjou, niece of the French King Charles VII. On May 22, 1444, a Treaty of Tours was signed between King Henry

VI of England and the French King Charles VII. Under the terms, King Charles VII, agreed to give his niece in marriage to Henry, but without dowry. The French king also demanded territories of Maine and Anjou in northern France. King Henry accepted. A five years truce between the Kingdoms of England and France was also signed that shocked the ruling elite class of England. By signing the Treaty of Tours, King Henry indirectly recognized Charles VII as King of France whilst he himself was crowned as King of France in 1431.

In April 1445, Henry VI married to Margaret of Anjou, who was crowned as Queen of England at Westminster, London, on May 30, 1445. After marriage, Henry VI was severely pressurized and threatened by the ruling class not to cede the lands of Maine and Anjou to King Charles of France.

In the meantime, England's rule over France collapsed speedily. Brittany was lost in 1449; Normandy in 1450 and Gascony in 1451. By 1453, the rulers of England lost all its continental possessions except for the Pale of Calais. King Henry VI made no serious efforts to recover these territories as he personally was a peace loving person and strictly against wars with France. As a result, he was considered a person incapable for the post of kingship and required to be removed. The tussle led to the outbreak of the Wars of the Roses (1455 - 1487) a series of personal dynastic wars for the throne of England.

Under such critical situation and pressures from the elite class, King Henry VI suffered a catastrophic mental breakdown in August 1453 and became completely unresponsive, even unable to speak. Subsequently, Henry's pregnant French wife Queen Margaret of Anjou took control of the realm. These were the days, when Margaret gave birth to a son, Edward, by the end of 1453.

In the meantime, Richard, Duke of York, conspired with the Great Council (Parliament) to remove King Henry VI. Richard was wealthiest and the most powerful magnate, a great-

grandson of Edward III. To achieve his goal, Richard raised arms against the king. Subsequently there was a war known as the First Battle of St. Albans that was fought on May 22, 1455, in which Richard,^[189] routed the king's forces and killed several prominent Lancastrians including Edmund, Duke of Somerset, Henry Percy and Lord of Clifford.

On July 10, 1460 King Henry VI was taken prisoner at Northampton and forced to acknowledge Richard, duke of York as heir, with the exclusion of his own son Edward. The Great Council also passed the Act of Settlement in October 1460, thereby transferred the right of succession to Richard, Duke of York and his heirs.

Fade up with kingship, non stop wars, murders and massacres, King Henry VI without any hesitation gave assent to the decision of the Great Council, but his French wife Queen Margaret of Anjou refused to acknowledge the dispossession of her son's right to the throne. Eventually the dispute turned in to long bloody wars between the two so-called Roses - the Lancastrian (the ruling class) and Yorkist the opposite group. For over thirty years (1455 - 1487), they fought for their personal motives, killed majority of the elite class, barons, earls and dukes of both the sides, along with the young generation of England that was made fodder of wars for no reason.

After the First and Second Battle of St Albans, there was a third war between the forces of Richard, Duke of York and the Queen Margaret of Anjou fought at the Battle of Wakefield near Wakefield, in West Yorkshire on December 30, 1460. During the war, Richard, Duke of York was killed along with his son Edmund of Rutland, who tried to flee but was captured and executed. At the other side, the eldest surviving son of Richard was installed as on March 4, 1461 as King Edward IV, while Henry and Margaret were forced to flee to Scotland. Now the kingdom had two kings.

Just three weeks later, on March 29, 1461, Towton War was fought on Palm Sunday,[190] where the massive warriors of both the factions - Yorkshire and Lancastrian met in open field between the villages of Towton and Saxton. At the time, the war ground was frozen due to heavy snow fall. The newly crowned King Edward IV, aged 19, brought around 36,000 warriors against the Queen Margaret of Anjou who had hired around 42,000 warriors aged between sixteen and sixty. A great number of serfs were also forced to fight and sacrifice their lives for the 'Roses' of England. King Henry VI refused to participate in the war, as a result Queen Margaret relied on Henry Beaufort, Duke of Somerset, to command their army assisted by at least 19 Lords.

The ten-hour bloodiest battle - the largest War of the Roses ended with the slaughter of 28,000 warriors - equivalent to one per cent population of England. At the time, the total population of England was roughly three million. In the war around 10% fighting-age population of England took the field.

After the battle, there were reports for some six miles long and three miles wide bloody soil, covered in corpses, where thousands were slaughtered, some mutilated; their noses and ears ripped off, fingers snipped from hands to remove rings and jewellery.[190] During the war, dead bodies were piled so high that fighting briefly ceased to clean the ground. The waters of the nearby river were said to have run red for three miles with the blood of the slain. It was also first proven gunfight. Prominent fatal casualties on the Queen Margaret's side included the Earl of Northumberland, Lord Egremont and Sir Andrew Trollope and his son. The Earls of Devon and Wiltshire were caught and beheaded. Forty-two knights were captured on the battle field and executed on Edward's orders. The result was a crushing victory for Edward, who seized the throne and was proclaimed king of England. Queen Margaret escaped to Scotland along with her son and Henry VI. They were also accompanied by many of their supporters including the Dukes

of Somerset and Exeter. After three years of stay in Scotland, Henry returned back to England in 1464. He was captured and placed in the Tower of London during 1465.

In the meantime, the Earl of Warwick - a kingmaker, previously an ally of Edward - switched sides and restored Henry VI to the throne in 1470 and marrying his youngest daughter Anne Neville to Henry's only son Prince Edward. Henry's restoration was brief. In 1471 Edward killed Earl of Warwick at the Battle of Barnet fought on April 14, 1471. After about two weeks, there was one more war, known as the Battle of Tewkesbury that was fought on May 4, 1471, in which Edward, aged 17, Prince of Wales, the only son of Henry VI was dragged from sanctuary and immediately killed along with many of his nobles by the orders of Edward IV. During the war, around 10,000 warriors were killed; fleeing men were cut down from behind. At the time, King Henry VI, then imprisoned in the Tower of London was murdered on Edward's orders during the night of May 21, 1471, so as to prevent further rebellion in his name. Queen Margaret of Anjou fled, but was captured and brought before Edward IV at Coventry. She remained a prisoner for four years later released by the King Edward after receiving a huge ransom of 50,000 crowns from Louis XI, King of France.

King Henry VI was initially buried in Chertsey abbey, later his body was shifted to St George's Chapel, Windsor Castle, by Richard III.[192]

Edward IV

King of England from March 4, 1461 until October 3, 1470 and again from April 11, 1471 until his death in 1483.

Edward – an offshoot of the Wars of the Roses – a power game between the family members of the Norman rulers of England; they raised arms against each other, fought bloody wars continuously for over 30 years, killed a large segment of the population of England, beheaded most of the powerful earls, dukes and other personalities. In a single Towton War, fought on March 29, 1461, one per cent population of England was killed, slaughtered and beheaded.

On July 26, 1469, after the Battle of Edgecote Moor, Edward was replaced by Henry VI as king of England.[193] Edward IV escaped to Flanders, part of Burgundy, accompanied by his younger brother Richard (later King Richard III). Charles, Duke of Burgundy was brother-in-law of Edward, who provided force and funds to Edward to invade and reconquer England. Subsequently Edward entered London on April 11, 1471, imprisoned King Henry VI, who was later found dead.

In 1475 Edward decided to invade France, a genetic disease carried by all the Norman monarchs of England. Leading a large force, Edward landed at Calais in June, 1475, but agreed to withdraw his forces against a bribe of 75,000 crowns and a yearly pension of 50,000 crowns offered by the French King Louis XI. In addition, many advisors of Edward also received pensions from the French. Finally a Treaty of Picquigny was signed on August 29, 1475, under which King Edward's daughter Elizabeth of York was to marry the French Prince

Charles on her coming of age. The two kings also agreed to a seven-year truce and free-trade between the two kingdoms.

Edward once again contemplated a fresh invasion of France, but before it could be carried out he fell ill and suddenly died on April 9, 1483 at the age of only 40. He was buried in St. George's Chapel, Windsor Castle and succeeded by his twelve-year-old son, Edward V, who was never crowned. His uncle Richard was named Lord Protector of the realm for Edward's son Edward V. But Richard III, brother of Edward IV, seized the crown and imprisoned Edward V along with his younger brother in the Tower of London, where both of them disappeared, probably murdered by Richard.^[194] Edward had had ten children by Elizabeth Woodville, seven of whom survived, two sons and five daughters. In the power game, Edward IV's father and brother were killed in the Battle of Wakefield, while his grandfather and another brother were executed for treason. Edward's two sons also killed within a year of Edward's death. The rest of the surviving children of Edward were declared illegitimate by Parliament of England in 1483, clearing the way for Richard III to become King. Edward had numerous illegitimate children and mistresses. The best known was Elizabeth Shore, also called Jane Shore. Another was Lady Eleanor Talbot. Edward IV's daughter Elizabeth of York later became the Queen consort of Henry VII of England.

Richard III

1483 – 1485

Richard III, son of Richard, 3rd Duke of York, who could reign as King of England for two years only from 1483 until 1485, as he was killed at the age of 32, in the Battle of Bosworth Field.[195] Previously he had lost his father, one uncle and two of his brothers during December 1460 battling for the crown. Richard married Anne Neville, the daughter of the earl of Warwick and had only one legitimate son Edward.

When his brother King Edward IV died in April 1483, Richard was named Lord Protector of the realm for Edward's son and successor, the 12-year-old Edward V. Arrangements were made for Edward's coronation on June 22, 1483; but, before the young king could be crowned, the marriage of his father Edward IV to Elizabeth Woodville was declared invalid by the Parliament of England, thereby declaring their children bastards and Richard as the rightful king. On June 25, an assembly of Lords and Commoners played their dirty role and endorsed the claim. The following day, Richard III, a brutal, man of savage nature, usurped the throne and was crowned at Westminster Abbey on July 6, 1483. The young prince Edward V along with his brother were captured and placed in the Tower of London. Within few days, accusations circulated that the boys had been murdered by their uncle Richard III. These were the days, when around 20% population of England had died of plague – Black Death that had returned at intervals in 1479 and 1480.

In the meantime, Henry Tudor, grandson of Catherine of Valois, the widow of Henry V and Owen Tudor a Welshman, born out of unlawful marriage claimed to the throne of England. In

August 1485, Henry Tudor marched across Wales to meet Richard III's forces at the Battle of Bosworth Field in Leicestershire. In the battle Richard III was killed and Henry Tudor was crowned as King Henry VII at the top of Crown Hill, near the village of Stoke Golding.[196] By the next year, Henry Tudor married Elizabeth of York daughter of Edward IV, thus uniting the House of Lancaster and the House of York.

After the battle, Richard's corpse was taken to Leicester and buried without honour in the Church of the Greyfriars. His remains were lost for more than five centuries. In September 2012, a team of archaeologists from Leicester University uncovered a body later identified as the remains of Richard III through comparison of his DNA samples with that of two matrilineal descendants of Richard III's eldest sister, Anne of York. Richard's remains were reburied in Leicester Cathedral on 26 March 2015.

Henry VII

1485 - 1509

In August 1485, King Richard III was killed at the Battle of Bosworth Field,[196] subsequently Henry Tudor – a Welsh was crowned as King Henry VII on August 22, 1485 at the top of Crown Hill, near the village of Stoke Golding. Henry VII was illegitimate son of Edmund Tudor son of Owen Tudor, born out of sexual relations of Owen Tudor with Catherine of Valois, the widow of Henry V – without lawful marriage. On the sudden death of King Henry V at a young age of 36, his French wife Queen Catherine subsequently became widow aged 21. She in due course, entered into a sexual relationship with Owen Tudor – a Welshman and became pregnant. There is no clear evidence either way whether Catherine and Owen Tudor actually married. No documentation of such a marriage exists. However, Owen and Catherine had at least six illegitimate children including Jasper Tudor and Edmund Tudor who was father of Henry VII. In due course, Edmund Tudor was "formally declared legitimate by Parliament."

Henry VII's formal coronation took place at Westminster abbey on October 30, 1486.[197] By the next year Henry married Elizabeth of York on January 18, 1486. She was the daughter of Edward IV and niece of Richard III thereby uniting the Yorkist and Lancastrian claims. This event is seen as marking the end of the War of Roses.

The Parliament of England was ordained to repeal the statute 'Titulus Regius' that declared Edward IV's marriage invalid and his children illegitimate. Thus the wife of Henry became legitimized.

At the time, Henry issued an edict that those who would swear fealty to him, notwithstanding any previous attainder, to be secure in his property and person.

In 1486 a priest called Richard Simmons traveled to Ireland with a boy called Lambert Simnel who was introduced as Edward, Earl of Warwick, next in Yorkist line to the throne, son of George Duke of Clarence and nephew of the two Yorkist Kings. From the King Henry's side, it was propagated that the real Edward was imprisoned in the Tower of London.[198] However, Lambert Simnel was crowned as King of England in Ireland supported by many powerful lords and earls including Gerald Fitz Gerald, 8th Earl of Kildare, who provided troops on large scale to Simnel to invade England.

At the same time, Margaret, Dowager Duchess of Burgundy, sister of both Edward IV and Richard III, supported the claimant Lambert Simnel at the advice of his nephew John De la Pole, Earl of Lincoln. Margaret provided Lincoln financial and military support in the form of 2000 German and Swiss warriors mostly equipped with the latest handguns. Later the Earl of Lincoln recruited around 4,500 warriors including Irish mercenaries, mostly Kerns, lightly armoured but highly mobile infantry.

Subsequently there was a fierce war between the forces of Henry VII and the Yorkists, accompanied by the newly crowned king Lambert Simnel. The war is known as the Battle of Stoke Field, fought near the village of East Stoke in Nottinghamshire on the morning of June 16, 1487. The battle field was surrounded on three sides by the River Trent. At the Yorkist side, around 8,000 warriors landed under the command of the Earl of Lincoln and Francis Lovell, 1st Viscount Lovell. At Henry's side, around 6,000 armed men landed in the battle field under the command of the Earl of Oxford. When King Henry VII himself arrived in the battle field, the number of warriors raised to about 12,000.

It was considered the last battle of the Wars of the Roses, for the throne of England. The battle was bitterly fought for three hours

and almost all the commanders at Yorkists side were killed by the Henry's forces. The Earl of Lincoln was killed along with the Yorkists German commander Martin Schwartz. In total it is thought that some 4,000 to 5,000 of Yorkist were killed during or after the battle. Thousands of the Yorkists warriors were captured beheaded, hanged and slaughtered without mercy in the marshy riverain fields. Most of the dead were buried in mass graves on site of the battle ground. At Henry's side, around 2,000 warriors lost their lives in this war.

Lambert Simnel - the newly crowned king of England was captured, but was pardoned by Henry VII. He was given a job in the royal kitchen, and later promoted to falconer. The surviving Irish nobles, who supported Simnel also pardoned. In terms of heavier casualties, the Battle of Stoke Field proved more dangerous than the Battle of Bosworth.

Again, after four years in 1490, an unknown person claimed to be Richard, Duke of York son of King Edward IV. Later Richard was publicly recognized by Margaret of York, widow of Charles the Bald, sister of Edward IV. However, Richard claimed the throne of England at the court of Burgundy in 1490.

In 1491, Richard landed in Ireland from there he went to France and was received in Paris by Charles VIII, King of France in a gathering of about 100 supporters of the House of York.

When it was known to Henry VII that Richard is supported by the king of France he immediately prepared to invade France. Henry crossed the Channel in October 1492 and besieged Boulogne. Under the circumstances, King Charles VIII of France offered Henry a huge amount as a price to give up claims of England over the French territories. Finally a Treaty 'The Peace of Etaples' was signed on November 3, 1492 by which both the kings accepted the following terms:[199] King of France agreed to expel Richard (Perkin Warbeck) one of the Henry's key enemy from France and Henry VII agreed to give up claims of England over the French territories against a sum of 742,000 crowns,

payable at 50,000 crowns per annum. The treaty was ratified in December.

In the meantime, Richard (or Perkin Warbeck) was also received by various other monarchs of Europe and was known in international diplomacy as the Duke of York.[200] In 1493, he attended the funeral of the Emperor Frederick III in Vienna and was recognised as the lawful King Richard IV of England. He was also offered support by the Holy Roman Emperor Maximilian I, who even recognised him as Richard IV of England. From Paris, Richard moved to Flanders where Margaret of Burgundy, sister of King Edward IV recognized him as her nephew and provided him funds and forces, who previously had supported Lambert Simnel during 1486-87.

On July 3, 1495, the so-called Richard or Perkin Warbeck, aged about 17, landed at Deal in Kent. He brought few ships and a small force provided to him by the Holy Emperor Maximilian I. Immediately he was surrounded by forces of King Henry VII, Richard fled to Ireland, where he was fully supported by Maurice FitzGerald, 9th Earl of Desmond. Later he went to Scotland, where he was well received by King James IV.[201] He was married to King James's cousin, Lady Catherine Gordon, a daughter of George Gordon, 2nd Earl of Huntly. The marriage was celebrated in Edinburgh with a tournament and a monthly pension of £112 was granted for Richard, as a clear indication that James IV officially accepted his claim to the throne of England.

King Henry VII prepared to invade Scotland and to meet the war expenses he raised taxes in England. The Celtic people of Cornwall rigorously resisted the new taxes required for an invasion of Scotland. They already considered their land as a colonial possession and not part of England. However the first revolt known as Cornish Rebellion of 1497 started in St Keverne, headed by Michael An Gof, a blacksmith in Cornish. Initially around 6,000 protestors marched on London with a plea that this

was a northern affair and had nothing to do with the Cornish people. When they reached Devon their numbers increased to 15,000 and were joined by Lord Audley and Thomas Flamank, a local barrister, who wanted to present a petition to the king against the advisers responsible for the king's action.

The procession marched through Wiltshire, Hampshire and Surrey into Kent. When they reached Taunton in Somerset, one of the tax collectors was killed. As a result, the protestors were surrounded on Saturday, June 17, 1497 by the king's forces headed by Sir Humphrey Stanley. The event is recorded as the Battle of Deptford Bridge fought on a site adjacent to the River Ravensbourne. The king's forces instantly butchered around 2,000 protestors and arrested their leaders Michael, Flamank and the Lord Audley. They were taken to Tower of London and beheaded as traitors on June 24, 1497. Their pierced heads were displayed on London Bridge. Flamank was quoted as saying "Speak the truth and only then can you be free of your chains".

In the meantime, Richard landed in England near Land's End on September 12, 1497 with just 120 men in two ships. He was received by thousands of unarmed people when he reached Exeter. In the meantime, Henry's forces arrived and Richard fled and took refuge in Beaulieu Abbey, in Hampshire, where he was captured. Richard, in his confession to King Henry at Taunton on October 5, 1497 disclosed his real name Perkin Warbeck son of Jehan de Werbecque, a poor burgess of Tournai in France. Perkin Warbeck further said, he had come to Cork in 1491 as a merchant's apprentice but was 'recognised' as a Yorkist prince Richard. Perkin Warbeck was then sent to the Tower of London, where he was hanged on November 23, 1499. After a week, Earl of Warwick was beheaded in the Tower on November 29, 1499. In general perception, it was difficult to believe either Perkin Warbeck or Richard of York son of King Edward IV was hanged.[202] Henry persuaded Pope Innocent VIII to issue a Papal bull of Excommunication against all claimants to Henry's throne.

In 1501, Henry's son, Arthus Tudor was married to Catherine of Aragon; she brought with her a dowry of 100,000 crowns. But after his marriage, Arthus aged 15, died within months at Ludlow Castle, probably from a viral respiratory illness.[203]

In 1503, when his wife Queen Elizabeth died during childbirth, King Henry arranged a papal dispensation from Pope Julius II for himself to marry his son's widow Catherine. After obtaining the dispensation, Henry had a second thought and decided to marry widow of his son to Prince Henry (Henry VIII) who was too young to contract the marriage according to Canon Law, and would be ineligible until age fourteen. Henry also betrothed his daughter Margaret to King James IV of Scotland. In 1505, Henry made plans to remarry Joan, the recently widowed Queen of Naples. He sent ambassadors to Naples, but the wedding never took place.

In the meantime, Henry suffered from tuberculosis and remained seriously sick. He died at Richmond Palace, Surrey on April 21, 1509 and was buried at Westminster Abbey, next to his wife, Elizabeth. He was succeeded by his second son, Henry VIII.

Henry VIII

1491 - 1547

Henry VIII was an illegitimate great grand son of Owen Tudor and Catherine of Volios, widow of King Henry V of England. At the death of her husband, Catherine was quite young aged 21. She entered into sexual relationship with Owen Tudor, a clerk in her palace, subsequently produced without marriage atleast six illegitimate children including Jasper Tudor and Edmund Tudor, who was father of Henry VII and grandfather of Henry VIII. Later Edmund Tudor was raised as Earl of Richmond and Jasper was created Earl of Pembroke. In the parliament of 1453, Edmund was formally declared legitimate.

Henry VIII was the second son of Henry VII and Elizabeth, daughter of Edward IV. When Henry's elder brother Arthur, heir to the throne died in 1502, Henry became the Prince of Wales and heir to the throne. After the death of his father Henry VII, Henry was crowned as King of England at the age of 17 on April 21, 1509. Six weeks later Henry married Catherine of Aragon, widow of his brother Arthur. Catherine bore him three sons and three daughters, but all died in infancy, except one daughter - Mary (later Queen Mary I) born in 1516.[204] Under the circumstances, Henry wanted to divorce his wife and marry some other girl. But divorce was not allowed in Catholisism, it became a challenge for a person who was the powerful King of England, claimant of the Divine Rights. To divorce his wife Catherine of Aragon, Henry was suggested "if it can be proven that a valid marriage had never taken place, in that case an annulment can be obtained by solemn profession in a religious

order, or by the Pope through an Act.” Therefore, the king, while taking disadvantage of this facility, falsely asserted the Pope Clement VII that his first marriage had never been valid. Henry had fallen in love with Anne Boleyn, the sister of one of his many mistresses, and tried to persuade the Pope Clement VII of the Roman Catholic Church through Lord Chancellor Thomas Wolsey to grant him an annulment of his marriage on the grounds that it had never been legal.

In May 1529, Wolsey approached the Pope but failed to obtain approval for divorce. As a result, Wolsey was dismissed, arrested and falsely charged with treason. Fearful and depressed Wolsey died in custody before he could be brought to trial. Since Henry considered himself as “God's chosen, and second only to God” therefore he decided to use his divine authority by establishing a new religion “Anglicanism” and a new Church in England parallel to the Roman Catholic Church in Rome, from whom he could get easily the required annulment orders of his marriage to Catherine of Aragon. He made radical changes in traditional religious ceremonies and rituals; he ordered clergy to preach against superstitious images, relics, miracles and pilgrimages, and to remove almost all candles from religious settings. Shrines of Saints were destroyed—including the popular one of St Thomas at Canterbury; relics were ridiculed as worthless old bones. Henry also closed down the Catholic monasteries and seized the great tracts of Church land and divided among the monarchy and its supporters. A new form of worship was set out in the Book of Common Prayer (1549 and 1552) based on the older liturgy but influenced by Protestant principles. Meanwhile, at the command of Henry, the Parliament of England forbidden all appeals to Rome and exacted the penalties of praemunire against all who introduced papal bulls into England. Parliament also prohibited the Church from making any regulations (canons) without the king's consent. Several more laws were passed in England. The Ecclesiastical

Appointments Act 1534 required the clergy to elect bishops nominated by the Sovereign.

In satisfy and fulfill the requirement of the king Henry, Thomas Cranmer, the first Archbishop of the newly established Church of England declared the marriage of Henry with Catherine null and void. Subsequently, Mary I, daughter of Henry, future Queen of England was declared as bastard. Henry married Anne Boleyn on January 25, 1533, who was crowned as Queen of England. In the meantime, the Pope decreed sentences of excommunication against King Henry VIII and Cranmer, declaring the decree of annulment issued by the Archbishop as invalid and the marriage of King Henry with Anne as void. Consequently, it was the first break between the Church of England and the Church of Rome after nearly five centuries.^[205] Now the Church of England was brought under the King's control. The pope and Catholic priests and monks were mocked as foreign devils.

Such actions of Henry VIII, who was Catholic by faith, stunned the entire nation, as well as the entire Catholic World. The Parliament of England, completely bowed before the will of Henry by passing an Act of Supremacy in 1534, declaring that: "the King our Sovereign Lord shall be taken, accepted and reputed the only Supreme Head in earth of the Church of England called Anglicana Ecclesia and that the king our sovereign lord, shall enjoy "all honours, dignities, preeminence, jurisdictions, privileges, authorities, immunities, profits and commodities to the said dignity."

Considering the people of England less than slaves, a Treasons Act 1534 was also passed shamelessly by the Parliament of England; they made it a high treason, punishable by death, to refuse to acknowledge the King as Supreme. The Act further specified that all those were guilty of high treason who do maliciously wish, will or desire by words or writing, or by craft

imagine, invent, practice ... to say anything against what the King had done.

Henry was addressed by the Parliament of England as "Henry the Eighth, by the Grace of God, King of England, France and Ireland, Defender of the Faith and of the Church of England and also of Ireland in Earth Supreme Head."

By passing the Treasons Act 1534, the Parliament granted the King Henry VIII "License to kill" any one or all who opposes his actions. Subsequently 73,000 Catholics of England were executed by Henry VIII who refused to relinquish their faith, Catholicism. King Henry started with John Fisher, Bishop of Rochester and Sir Thomas More, former Prime Minister of England, both of whom refused to take the oath to the King and were subsequently convicted of high treason and beheaded at Tower Hill, just outside the Tower of London.

Thomas More (1478 -1535) was a great scholar, author and statesman of England. He even refused to attend the coronation of Anne Boleyn as the Queen of England. Subsequently he was charged with high treason for denying the validity of the Act of Succession and also denying that the king was the legitimate head of the church. He was imprisoned, tried and sentenced to be hanged, drawn and quartered, but the king commuted this to execution by decapitation. The execution took place on July 6, 1535.^[206] His severed head was fixed upon a pike over London Bridge for a month; then his daughter Margaret Roper rescued it, possibly by bribery, before it could be thrown in the River Thames. At the time, most of the England was Catholic; they demanded freedom to continue worshipping as Catholics. They also started demonstrations against the establishment of the Church of England, condemned dissolution of the monasteries and break up of England with the Roman Church and the king's supremacy and interference in the religious affairs, because of his personal issue of second marriage. According to the Catholic orthodoxy all the actions of the King Henry were not less than

heresy. In October 1536, there was a large popular rising in York, Yorkshire and in the other areas of the Northern England, known as the Pilgrimage of Grace. It quickly gained support in Horncastle, Market Rasen, Caistor and other nearby towns.

With the support from local gentry, a force of around 40,000 demonstrators marched on Lincoln and by October 14, they occupied Lincoln Cathedral. As a result, many demonstrators were arrested along with their leaders. They were instantly hanged at Tyburn; one of the lawyers from Willingham was hanged, drawn and quartered for his involvement.

During 1536 - 37, the city of York was occupied by about 30,000 protesters headed by Robert Aske, a barrister. They resumed Catholicism and resettled the monks and nuns who were expelled from their houses. All the king's newly installed tenants were driven out from the city. Observing such deteriorating situation, King Henry VIII invited Aske to a royal banquet, where he thanked him for raising the issues to his attention and promised pardon to all, if dispersed. Aske told the protesters to go home as the king had accepted their demands. Once the demonstrators were dispersed, Aske and 200 of his associates were arrested and hanged. Aske was hanged in chains from the walls of York Castle as a warning to others. Martial law was imposed upon the demonstrating regions, where most of the demonstrators were hanged for treason including Sir John Bigod, Sir Thomas Percy, Sir Henry Percy, Sir John Bulmer, Sir Stephan Hamilton, Sir Nicholas Tempast, Sir William Lumley, Sir Edward Neville, Sir Robert Constable, the abbots of Barlings, Sawley, Fountains and Jervaulx Abbeys and many others in July 1537. In all, 216 lords and knights, half a dozen abbots, 38 monks and 16 parish priests were put to death.

Under the cover of a new religion or Henry-schism, branded as Anglicanism (unknown form of Christianity), King Henry VIII was able to marry atleast six wives. Anne Boleyn, his second wife was beheaded on fabricated charges of adultery, incest, and

high treason on May 19, 1536. To prove incest charges, the brother of Anne Boleyn was also beheaded for having sexual relationship with his sister Anne Boleyn. Subsequently, Elizabeth I, daughter of Anne Boleyn (future Queen of England) was declared a bastard.

King Henry, also beheaded one more of his wife Catherine Howard, Queen of England, against the similar charges of adultery. Her so-called lovers, Thomas Culpeper and Francis Dereham were executed at Tyburn on December 10, 1541.^[207] Culpeper was beheaded and Dereham was hanged, drawn and quartered (cut into pieces while alive). Their heads were placed atop London Bridge.

In the case of Catherine Howard, his fifth wife, the matter was referred to the Parliament for some legal proceedings. The Slave Parliament of England shamelessly passed a Bill of Attainder (punishment without trial) on January 21, 1542 that made it treason - punishable by death - for a Queen consort to fail to disclose her "sexual history" to the king within 20 days of their marriage, or to incite someone to have adultery with her. This Bill instantly made Catherine unequivocally guilty. Catherine was taken to the Tower of London on February 10, 1542. By the next day, the bill of attainder received the Royal Assent,^[208] and Catherine's execution was scheduled for 7 am on 13 February. She was beheaded with one stroke especially with the sword of her husband Henry VIII, and was buried in an unmarked grave.

In 1544, King Henry was declared "Defender of the Faith and of the Church of England" by the Parliament of England, nearly equivalent to the status of Pope. Apart from six wives, Henry had affairs with many other women including Elizabeth "Bessie" Blount and Mary Boleyn. Elizabeth Blount gave birth to Henry's illegitimate son, Henry FitzRoy, who was made Duke of Richmond in June 1525. Mary Boleyn was Henry's mistress before her sister Anne Boleyn became his second wife. There has been speculation that Mary's two children, Catherine and Henry

were fathered by Henry VIII, but the King never acknowledged them as he did with Henry FitzRoy.

In 1510, it was reported that Henry was conducting an affair with one of the sisters of Edward Stafford, 3rd Duke of Buckingham, either Elizabeth or Anne Hastings. Henry also have had an affair with Mary, one of the Shelton sisters in 1535. Aside from these five affairs, there were also numerous other short-term and secret illicit liaisons, mostly maintained at the king's river-side mansion of Jordan House.

When Henry VIII broke from the Roman Catholic Church, he asked James V of Scotland to convert accordingly.[209][210] James V was the nephew of King Henry whose sister Margaret had married James IV of Scotland. However, King James not only ignored his request but refused even a meeting with Henry to discuss the issue. In retaliation, King Henry ordered his forces to invade Scotland. Subsequently there was a war between the forces of England and Scotland, known as the Battle of Solway Moss that took place a few hundred yards to the south of Longtown, in north Cumbria on November 24, 1542. The war was almost over as soon as it had begun, led to a humiliating Scottish defeat. In the war, around 3,000 warriors of England defeated roughly 18,000 Scots.[211][212] They were halted at the Sandy Ford, later trapped at the south bank of the River Esk, where several hundred were drowned while attempting to cross the Ford. Around 1,200 were taken as prisoners including two Earls, five Lords and 500 landowners and noblemen. Further 3,000 Scot horses were captured, 20 canons, 120 guns and 4 carloads of lances. Most of the prisoners were released against heavy ransom. Humiliated by the defeat, young King James died a few weeks later aged 30, leaving behind a six-day-old daughter, Mary, Queen of Scots.

In 1537, at the command of Henry VIII, the Parliament of Ireland passed an Act of Treason, thereby the entire Irish nation was pressurized to become 'deaf and dumb' against the criminal

activities of the monarch of England. No one was allowed to speak a single word against Henry VIII or even 'imagine' protest against any action by the monarch of England. Some parts of the Act read as under:

"To maliciously wish, will or desire, by words or writing or by craft, imagine, invent, practice or attempt any bodily harm to be done or committed to the King's most royal person and the Queen or their heirs apparent; Or by such means to deprive them of the dignity, title or name of their royal estates. To slanderously publish "by express writing or words" that the Sovereign is a heretic, tyrant, schismatic, infidel or usurper of the Crown." [213]

Again on June 18, 1541 the Parliament of Ireland in Dublin passed 'Crown of Ireland Act' thereby created the 'Kingdom of Ireland' and the title for Henry VIII, his heirs and successors as King of Ireland. At the time, Henry was designated as Lord of Ireland.

Wales annexed to England

In 1536, King Henry VIII annexed Wales to England through military might, as a 'conquered territory.' The Parliament of England passed an Act of 1536 which reads as under:

"That the Country or Dominion of *Wales* shall be, stand and continue for ever from henceforth incorporated, united and annexed to and with this his Realm of *England*." [214]

Subsequently Wales became part of England, lost its freedom, national status and identity; Wales even had to relinquish its own language, law, legislature, culture and religious liberty. The Welsh people were compelled to relieve Catholicism in favour of Anglicanism. As per the Acts, the law of England was to be the

only law of Wales and English was to become the only language of the courts of Wales. Those using the Welsh language were not to get jobs in public offices in the territories of the king of England.

Henry VIII invades Scotland

When King Henry VIII invaded France in 1513 for his self created reasons and motives, King James IV of Scotland declared war on England in support of France, under the traditional treaty 'Auld Alliance'. Pope Leo X sent a letter to King James IV threatening him with ecclesiastical censure for breaking peace treaties of June 28, 1513. Subsequently King James was excommunicated by Cardinal Christopher Bainbridge. Finally, there was a furious war between England and Scotland, known as the Battle of Flodden fought on September 9, 1513, near Northumberland.[215] King James led one of the largest ever army roughly 40,000 warriors and advanced into England and captured four castles in northern England in August 1513.[216][217] At the time, King Henry VIII was in France assisting the Emperor Maximilian to invade France. However, in Henry's absence, Lord Surrey disastrously defeated the Scot forces. During the war, King James was killed along with some 12,000 Scot soldiers including Alexander Stewarts, Lord Chancellor of Scotland, and a great number of the Scot Lords, Earls, Abbot, chieftains, noblemen and knights. At the opposite side around 1,500 warriors of England lost their lives.

The King James' corpse was identified after the battle and taken to Berwick, where it was embalmed and placed in a lead coffin before being transported to London. When King Henry returned from France, the unburied body of James was found in the woodshed of Sheen monastery, even after the Pope had granted permission for his burial. Later the body was lost. It is presumed

that the king's head, with red hair was removed and eventually buried at St Michael Wood Street, London.

James IV at the age of 15 had rebelled against his father King James III, who was killed during the Battle of Sauchieburn, fought on June 11, 1488.[218] This is how James ascended to the throne and reigned as King James IV for 25 years. Throughout this period James IV wore a heavy iron chain around his waist, next to the skin, as a constant reminder of his role in the death of his father.

James IV left behind one legitimate child, his successor, James V and eight illegitimate children from four different mistresses, several of whom became prominent figures in Scotland.

On October 21, 1513, the full Parliament of Scotland met at Stirling Castle where the 17-month-old child son of James IV was crowned as King James V, in the Chapel Royal, on September 9, 1513.[219] During his childhood, the country was ruled by regents, first by his mother (sister of King Henry VIII) until she remarried in the following year, and then by John Stewart, 2nd Duke of Albany and many others.

In 1524, James dismissed his Regents and was proclaimed an adult ruler by his mother. He refused to follow the will of his uncle King Henry VIII to transform the Scottish nation from Catholicism to Anglicanism. In 1525, Archibald Douglas, 6th earl of Angus, arrested King James and held him as a virtual prisoner for three years. Douglas was stepfather of James V, who married his mother dowager Queen, widow of James IV and elder sister of King Henry VIII, on August 6, 1514. At the time, James V was only two-years old. In the meantime, many efforts were made to free the young King but failed. Finally James escaped from the prison in 1528, regained his authority and forced into exile the Douglas family. Those who relinquished Catholicism in favour of Anglicanism were persecuted as heretics. The most famous of these was Patrick Hamilton, a churchman, who introduced into

Scottish theology Martin Luther's rediscovery of the distinction of Law and Gospel. He was burned alive at the stake in St Andrews by placing gunpowder under his arms on February 29, 1528.

On January 19, 1537 Pope Paul III sent James a blessed sword and hat symbolizing his prayers that James would be strengthened against heresies from across the border.

On January 1, 1537 James renewed the traditional treaty Auld Alliance between France and England, and married Madeleine of Valois on January 1, 1537 in Paris,^[220] third daughter of King Francis I of France, who was a serious patient of tuberculosis. The couple left France for Scotland on May 17, 1537 arriving at Leith, the king's Scottish fleet accompanied with ten French ships carrying dowry. On her arrival, Madeleine's health deteriorated even further, and she became seriously sick. Only a month later, on July 7, 1537 she died in her husband's arms at Edinburgh.

After one year, King James V married Mary of Guise, daughter of Claude, Duke of Guise, and widow of Louis II d'Orleans, Duke of Longueville, by proxy on June 12, 1538. Mary already had two sons from her first marriage and the new union produced two sons who died in April 1541. Their daughter and James's only surviving legitimate child, Mary, was born in 1542 at Linlithgow Palace.

Same year in 1541, the mother of King James died who was sister of King Henry VIII. By the next year in 1542, there was a war over religious faith between England and Scotland known as the Battle of Hadden Rig fought within the Scottish Borders, about 3 miles east of Kelso on August 24, 1542. The army of England led by Robert Bowes was decisively defeated by the Scots under James V.

The Henry's motives behind the war were to transform Scotland from Catholicism to Anglicanism. King James V refused to

relinquish their Catholic faith. As a result, Henry again prepared for another war, invaded Scotland with full force. The Battle of Solway Moss, fought near the River Esk proved a disastrous defeat for the Scots. The battle was over as soon as it had begun. Several hundred Scots were believed to be drowned and around 1,200 taken prisoners including two Earls, five Lords and 500 landowners and noblemen. King James was just 10 km away from the battle ground; he received at a time two news, the defeat of his army and birth of a girl instead of a son to his wife. Humiliated and shocked by the defeat, King James lost his senses and became seriously sick, even lost the will to live further. He was reported to have stated that the House of Stewart “began with a girl and it will end with a girl” Two weeks later, King James V died on December 14, 1542 at the age of 30 in Falkland Palace, leaving behind six-days-old legitimate daughter and nine known illegitimate children. James was buried at Hollyrood Abbey in Edinburgh alongside his first wife Madeleine and two his sons. James V was succeeded by his infant daughter as Queen Mary of Scotland.

At this stage, King Henry VIII used “marriage” as a weapon to conquer Scotland. He pressurized the men at helm in Scotland to arrange marriage of his son Edward, aged 5 years with the infant Mary, Queen of Scots. When the Scottish authorities refused, Henry threatened to invade Scotland. He made preparations for war to achieve his motives by force. Finally a Treaty of Greenwich was signed on July 1, 1543 and the marriage of the Queen of Scots was reluctantly accepted by the Regent of Scotland, the Earl of Arran. But the decision of the Regent was severely resisted by the strong internal factions Catholics by faith who believed in national independence. They informed the Regent, that the entire Scottish nation will never agree to be ruled by England, even if the whole nobility of the realm give consent to the marriage, yet the common people and the stones in the street would rise and rebel against the decision. Finally Parliament of Scotland revoked the treaty. As a result, on

December 20, 1544 Henry declared war on Scotland and dispatched sea-borne army with orders to put men, women and children to fire and sword without exception.

On May 3, the Henry's forces led by the Earl of Hertford and Viscount Lisle burned the major towns and cities of Scotland. In Edinburgh within a seven mile radius all the houses were burnt including Holyroodhouse and the Abbey as the first phase of the war, known as the Rough Wooing. The town of Dunbar was set on fire and its population burnt in their beds. The destruction continued through the year. In all 192 'towns and churches were taken and burnt, including Melrose Abbey. After the killing, fire and looting the Henry's army sailed away with captured goods including 10,386 cattle, 12,429 sheep, 1,296 horses and others loaded in two ships owned by King James V of Scotland.[221] Despite such heavy losses, the people of Scotland refused to surrender. They shifted the infant Queen of Scotland to Stirling Castle, to keep her out of Henry's reach.

Late in life, Henry became fat with a waist measuring 54 inches (140 cm) and unable to move around. He died at the age of 55 on January 28, 1547 and was buried next to Jane Seymour in St. George's Chapel at Windsor Castle.[222]

Henry VIII, Head of Church of England and Defender of Faith left behind one legitimate son Edward VI, two daughters Mary I and Elizabeth I, both to become Queens of England and both of them were declared 'basrards' by their father, duly endorsed by the Parliament of England. Henry VIII acknowledged one illegitimate son FitzRoy who was made Duke of Richmond and Somerset. But there were many suspected illegitimate children of Henry VIII by different mistresses: John Perrot, his mother being Mary Berkeley the wife of Sir Thomas Perrot; Thomas Stucley, his mother being Jane Pollard the wife of Sir Hugh Stukeley; Richard Edwardes, born to Mrs Agnes Edwardes; *Ethelreda Malte*, born to Joan Dingley, paternity claimed by John Malte; *Catherine Carey* wife of William Carey, daughter of Henry's

mistress Mart Boleyn, the sister of his second wife, Anne Boleyn.[223] The late Diana, Princess of Wales was a direct descendant of Catherine Carey. Henry was succeeded by his 9-year-old son Edward VI.

Edward VI

1547 - 1553

After the death of Henry VIII, the proprietary rights of England were passed on to his only legitimate son Prince Edward, aged 9, who was crowned at Westminster Abbey as Edward VI King of England on February 28, 1547. Jane Seymour, mother of Edward VI and third wife of Henry VIII died of fever twelve days later. To run affairs of the kingdom, a Regency Council was established headed by Edward VI's uncle, Edward Seymour, Duke of Somerset who was made Lord Protector.

Before death, King Henry VIII left incomplete mission of marrying his son Edward to Mary, Queen of Scots by force.[224] Through this method, Henry VIII wanted to conquer Scotland and convert its population to Anglicanism. To fulfill Henry's desire, the new management of England (Edward VI) immediately prepared to invade Scotland. As a result, the last pitched battle was fought between England and Scotland on the banks of the River Esk, close to the town of Musselburgh, just east of Edinburgh, on September 10, 1547, known as the Battle of Pinkie Cleugh being the continuity of the Rough Wooing.

Somerset, Lord Protector of England brought around 16,800 warriors along with German, Italian and Spanish mercenaries, loaded with gunpowder weapons. They were closely supported by a British fleet of 30 warships. At the other side, the Scottish

army numbered about 22,000, led by the Earl of Arran, Regent of Scotland, who organised his troops out of Edinburgh, on the west bank of the River Esk, blocking Somerset's march on the Scottish capital.

Finally a furious war was fought that proved a catastrophic defeat for Scotland, it became known as Black Saturday.[225] Around 6,000 Scots were slaughtered, many drowned while jumping in the river Esk. Eventually the extent of war ground was filled with dead bodies, hands, legs and heads. Some sources claim the figure of the slain Scot was 15,000. However about 2,000 Scots were taken prisoners including nobles.

Despite the defeat and slaughter of their army, the Scottish authorities refused to hand over the infant Queen Mary to Somerset. They secretly sent the Queen to France (later to be betrothed to the young Prince Francis in 1558, who became King of France in 1559).[226] In retaliation, Somerset occupied several Scottish strongholds and large parts of the Lowlands and Borders, but without peace.

In 1549, during the reign of Edward, it was decided to convert its Catholic populace to Anglicanism, subsequently a controversial religious book "The Book of Common Prayer" was imposed through an Act of Uniformity, as the sole legal form of worship in English language, instead of Latin. At the time, English was not the common language of England; it was mainly spoken by the elite class, descendants of the invading Anglo-Saxons. By the Act of Uniformity, efforts were made to raise English as a 'religious language.' This time, the people of Devon, Cornwall and Norfolk revolted and prepared to offer their lives to save their faith - Catholicism and their language Cornish. Majority population of Cornwall did not speak English; they refused to worship in English language.

To crush the protestors around 15,000, heavy forces composed of German and Italian mercenaries were dispatched under Lord John Russell and Lord Grey. The event is known as the Prayer

Book Revolt, in which around 5,500 protestors were killed, hanged, drawn and quartered including Richard Bennet, vicar of St Veep, Martin Geffrey, Sir Humphrey Arundell, Robert Kett and others. Their heads were displayed on the London Bridge. About 900 prisoners were taken to Clyst Heath, south east of Exeter, in Devon. On August 5, 1549, orders were issued by John Russell for all nine hundred prisoners to cut their throats, what has been known as the Massacre of Clyst Heath.

On July 6, 1553, the young King Edward VI died at the age of 15, at Greenwich Palace on July 6, 1553 and was buried in Henry VII Lady chapel at Westminster Abbey on August 8, 1553.[227]

Queen Mary I

1553 - 1558

When Edward VI died, Princess Mary and Elizabeth, half sisters of Edward VI were declared bastards by their father Henry VIII, also endorsed by the Parliament of England. Taking advantage of the situation, the Chief Minister, John Dudley, Duke of Northumberland, nominated Lady Jane Grey as Queen of England, who was wife of his son Lord Guildford Dudley. The Privy Council also acknowledged the personal decision of the Chief Minister Dudley; thereby Mary and Elizabeth were excluded from the line of succession.

After nominating Jane Grey, aged 16, prime job of the Chief Minister Dudley was to detain Princess Mary so as to prevent her from gathering support. But Mary safely moved to East Anglia, where she began to rally her supporters. Dudley set out from London with troops on July 14; in his absence the Privy Council switched their allegiance from Jane to Mary, and proclaimed her queen in London on July 19. As a result, Jane's nine-day reign abruptly came to an end and she was imprisoned in the Tower along with her husband. The new queen Mary entered London in a triumphal procession on July 19, 1553 and on August 22, the Chief Minister Dudley, father-in-law of Jane was executed.

The Parliament of England also declared that marriage of Henry VIII with Catherine of Aragon as valid and legal (previously declared invalid and illegal). Thus Mary became legitimate.

On October 1, 1553, Mary became Queen of England, Ireland and Head of the Church of England and Defender of the Faith despite her belief in the papal supremacy. Queen Mary immediately commanded to reverse all the policies of her father Henry VIII in religious affairs, reversed England from Anglicanism to Catholic Christianity.

In the meantime, former Queen Jane Grey and her husband Lord Guildford Dudley were both charged with high treason, together with two of Dudley's brothers along with Thomas Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury – founder of Anglicanism. Their trial, by a special commission took place on November 13, 1553. All of them were found guilty and sentenced to death. Jane was found guilty of having signed a number of documents as "Jane the Queen"; her sentence was to "be burned alive on Tower Hill or beheaded – depends on the Queen Mary's approval." In the meantime, Jane was asked to convert to Catholicism, which she refused. Finally on the morning of February 12, 1554, her husband Lord Guildford Dudley was taken from the Tower of London to the public execution place at Tower Hill, where he was beheaded. A horse and cart brought his remains back to the room where Jane was staying. She was later taken out to Tower Green, inside the Tower, to be beheaded. Jane gave a speech upon ascending the scaffold:

"Good people, I am come hither to die, and by a law I am condemned to the same. The fact, indeed, against the Queen's highness was unlawful, and the consenting thereunto by me: but touching the procurement and desire thereof by me or on my behalf, I do wash my hands thereof in innocency, before God, and the face of you, good Christian people, this day." [228]

She then recited Psalm 51 (*Have mercy upon me, O God*) in English language, and handed her gloves and handkerchief to her maid. The executioner asked her forgiveness, which she granted him,

pleading: "I pray you dispatch me quickly." Referring to her head, she asked, "Will you take it off before I lay me down?", and the axeman answered: "No, madam." She then blindfolded herself. Jane then failed to find the block with her hands, and cried, "What shall I do? Where is it?" Probably Sir Thomas Brydges, the Deputy Lieutenant of the Tower, helped her find her way. With her head on the block, Jane spoke the last words of Jesus as recounted by Luke, "Lord, into thy hands I commend my spirit."

Jane and Guildford were buried in the Chapel of St Peter at Vincula on the north side of Tower Green. Jane's father, Duke of Suffolk, was executed 11 days after Jane, on February 23, 1554.^[229]

These were the days, when arrangements were being made for the marriage of Queen Mary to the future Philip II of Spain, a staunch Catholic by faith. In April 1554, the Act for the Marriage of Queen Mary to Philip was passed by the Parliament of England. Under the terms of marriage treaty, Philip of Spain was to enjoy his wife's titles and honours as King of England and Ireland for as long as their marriage should last. All official documents, including Acts of Parliament were to be dated with both their names and Parliament was to be called under the joint authority of the couple. For all practical purposes, the Parliament of England accepted shamelessly Philip of Spain as King of England.

For the subject population of England, it was painful for them to accept a 'stranger' as their king. Subsequently at a single call by Thomas Wyatt, son of a poet, thousands of people gathered and raised slogans against the Queen and the Parliament. The French ambassador, de Noailles offered support to Wyatt, who set up his command. When Queen Mary was informed of Wyatt's processions, she offered a pardon for those who would retreat peacefully to their homes within twenty-four hours. On behalf of the Queen, the Duke of Norfolk arrived to negotiate with Wyatt

at his headquarters in Rochester. Wyatt refused while leading thousands of the protestors.

On February 2, 1554, over twenty thousand men arrived against Wyatt, raising slogans in favour of the Queen Mary. Side by side, a lucrative reward (a valuable land) was offered to those who would capture Wyatt.

While moving from Southwark to Kingston, Wyatt was arrested on March 15, 1554. Before death, Wyatt was severely tortured for confessing if there was any involvement of Princess Elizabeth in protests, but Wyatt took the entire blame on his own. In the meantime, Elizabeth remained imprisoned as a precautionary measure.

On April 11, 1554, Wyatt was beheaded and his body was further cut into four pieces along with approximately 90 protestors, many of whom were hanged, drawn and quartered. The pierced head of Wyatt was hung from a gallows and his limbs were circulated among different towns.[230]

On July 25, 1554 Queen Mary I of England, aged 37 married to Philip II of Spain, aged 26, who had a son from his previous marriage. Since Philip spoke no English, the wedding mass was held in a combination of French, Spanish and Latin. After the wedding Philip and Mary presided over a joint session of Parliament held on November 30, 1554 and Philip was declared "King of England." Philip and Mary agreed to bring the people of England back to Roman Catholicism by force under severe punishments in a Spanish method applied through the Spanish Inquisition. Philip stayed in England for about a month and left for Spain on August 1554.

Mary ordained the people of England to convert to Catholicism. It was shocking when she was known that the subject populace of England in general was less interested in the restoration of Catholicism,[231] as they already had relinquished their faith Catholicism and shifted to Anglicanism at the command of her

father King Henry VIII and Edward VI. In Queen's view it was 'heresy' punishable by death. Army and the Parliament of England, both were at her command, she ordered for all to revert back to Catholicism forthwith and must attend Mass -religious service of the Roman Catholic Church. At the same time, severe persecution started.

It was the time, when the people of England had to choose in between death and Catholicism. The Parliament of England officially restored Catholic Christianity, reinstated the heresy laws and those judged guilty of heresy against the Catholic faith, could legally be punished. John Rogers, lecturer at St. Paul's Cathedral was the first to be burned alive at Smithfield on February 4, 1555. Three days later, Lawrence Saunders, Rector of London Church of All Hallows was burned on February 8, at Coventry; followed by John Hooper, former Bishop of Gloucester and Rowland Taylor, Rector of Hadleigh in Suffolk, both were burned on February 9, 1555. Many others, the most prominent members of society were also burnt including Thomas Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury; Nicholas Ridley, Bishop of London and others. Thomas Cranmer was the founder of Anglicanism. He was also the person who had pronounced the judgment that Henry's marriage with Catherine of Aragon was against the law of God. As a result, Mary I was declared a Bastard. The Anglican religious Book of Common Prayer and the Thirty-Nine Articles were derived from the work of Cranmer.

During the trial, Cranmer submitted himself to the authority of the Queen and recognized the Roman Catholic Pope as Head of the Church.[232] Cranmer also accepted fully the Catholic theology including papal supremacy and transubstantiation, and stated that there was no salvation outside the Catholic Church. But the Queen Mary and the Pope both were not prepared to spare him. He was handed over to flames; his dying words were, "Lord Jesus, receive my spirit ... I see the heavens open and Jesus standing at the right hand of God." [233]

Queen Mary kept on burning those people continuously for four years, who refused to convert to Catholicism. To terrorize the whole nation, some 284 high-level clergymen and others (56 of them women) were executed; 30 died in prison, but the majority of the 284 were burned alive. They also included tradesmen, married men and women, sometimes in unison; at least one couple was burned alive with their daughter. The persecution of Anglicans led them to call her Bloody Mary.

Philip arrived back in March of 1557 and involved England in a war with France.^[234] As a result, the French mounted a surprise attack on Calais and took it. Calais had been under England for over two hundred years and Mary was blamed for its loss.

In March of 1558 Mary fell into depression and would not leave her room. All the hopes of her life were unfulfilled. Philip was sent many update reports of her condition but he did not return. She was at St. James palace when in October she made a will in which she stated that her husband should have no rule within England. On November 6, the Counselors visited Mary in her bed chamber and urged her to name Elizabeth as heir. She did with this hope that Elizabeth would continue to uphold the Catholic faith.

On November 16, 1558 the will was read aloud in Mary's bed chamber. By dawn the next morning Mary ordered to celebrate mass in her room. As the service ended, she died peacefully at the age of 42. The betrothal ring was removed from her finger and she was buried in Westminster Abbey.

Queen Elizabeth I

1558 - 1603

Queen Mary I died on November 17, 1558, subsequently the proprietary rights of England were transferred to her half-sister Elizabeth I, who became Queen of England on January 15, 1559 at the age of 25.[235] She was declared an illegitimate daughter after her mother Anne Boleyn was beheaded at the command of her father King Henry VIII. On ascending the throne, Elizabeth was informed that the people of England had converted to Catholicism during the short period of Mary's rule. Since Elizabeth was raised in Anglican faith - anti Catholicism, therefore she instantly decided to revert back the subject populace of England for the third time to Anglicanism, later mistakenly called Protestantism.

The first concern of Queen Elizabeth was of her legitimacy; being a bastard, she was not illegible to throne of England neither the Head of a Church. She was illegitimate under both the Anglican and Catholic law. To resolve the issue, Parliament was summoned in 1559, solely subordinate to the monarchs of England. Both the Houses - House of Lords and House of Commons addressed the monarchs of England in the following manner: "We, your most humble, faithful and obedient subject - the Lords spiritual and temporal, and the Commons ... most humbly beseech your most excellent majesty...

Subsequently an Act of Supremacy of 1559 was passed by which Elizabeth was declared as the "Supreme Governor of the Church of England"[236] - parallel to the status of a Pope (representative of God on Earth) that gave Elizabeth ultimate control over the

Church of England. On May 8, 1559, the Act of Supremacy became law; according to that Act, the entire clergy, government employees, armed forces, member of parliaments, students and the others had to sign the "Oath of loyalty to the Queen" failure to do so was to be treated as treasonable. The Act reads as under:

"I (name), do utterly testify and declare in my conscience, that the Queen's Highness is the only Supreme Governor of this Realm ... in all Spiritual or Ecclesiastical Things or Causes...; and that no foreign Prince, Person (Pope) have any jurisdiction within this Realm; and therefore I do utterly renounce and forsake all foreign Jurisdictions (jurisdiction of the Catholic Church of Rome)... that from henceforth I shall bear faith and true Allegiance to the Queen's Highness, her Heirs and lawful Successors ..." [237]

After signing the oath of loyalty, one had to convert in writing from Catholicism to Anglicanism - a new form of Christianity introduced by Henry VIII.

In the meantime the Church of England was also reestablished, parallel to the Church of Rome. Side by side, an Act of Uniformity of 1559 was passed by the Parliament so as to bring the subject populace of England in "Uniformity" - that was Anglicanism. They were also required to follow the Book of Common Prayer - a religious book introduced in Anglicanism. Catholics were forced to attend Sunday Service in an Anglican Church; ministers of Catholic churches were ordered not to wear the surplice or other Roman Catholic vestments. According to the Catholic doctrine, there was a ban on marriage for Catholic priests, now they were allowed to marry; images from churches were removed.[238] Finally, it was now treason to follow the Catholic Christianity and the Church of Rome.

To defend their Catholic faith, the subject population of England was prepared to sacrifice their lives, especially in Northern England, where several powerful nobles became part of the

'Rising in the North' during 1569. The revolt was led by Thomas Percy, 7th Earl of Northumberland and Charles Navile, 6th Earl of Westmorland. On November 30, 1569 they entered Durham along with the thousands of protestors, reestablishing there Catholic services and celebrated Mass in Surham Cathedral. From Durham, the protestors marched southward, restoring the Mass service at Staindrop, Darlington, Richmond and Ripon, as far as Bramham Moor.

To tackle the protestors, around 7,000 royal soldiers led by the Earl of Sussex and Sir George Bowes arrived and started killing them. Many tried to escape but were butchered. Around 600 were hanged, drawn and quartered. At Durham, sixty-six people were executed. At York alone, 28 priests were hanged, bowelled and quartered. A large number of the captured protestors were removed to London. In 1572, the Earl of Northumberland was captured and beheaded in York without a trial, on August 22, 1572. His head was set on a high pole over Micklegate Bar, where it remained for about two years, and was then stolen in the night by some unknown persons. Lord Westmorland died penniless in Flanders on November 16, 1601. On February 25, 1570 the Pope, Pius V called 'Anglicanism' a wicked doctrine. He excommunicated Queen Elizabeth declared her "a heretic, pretended Queen of England, servant of crime."^[239] Pope further said, "this very woman, having seized the crown, and monstrously had usurped the place of supreme head of the Church in all England." The Pope ordered all her subjects do not dare obey her orders, mandates and laws. Those who shall act to the contrary would be included in the like sentence of excommunication.

Immediately after the excommunication, Catholics were now seen as a great threat to the Queen and the realm. This was compounded when Jesuits started arriving in England with the sole purpose of defending the Catholic Christianity.

To counter the move of Pope, the Parliament of England, during 1571, passed the 'Recusancy Acts' that made it high treason to obey the authority of Pope rather than the Queen including being a Jesuit, being Roman Catholic or harbouring a Catholic priest. The standard penalty for all those convicted of treason at the time was execution by being hanged, drawn and quartered.

Again in 1581 one more Act was passed that made it treason, to withdraw subject people of England from allegiance to the Queen or the state religion - Anglicanism. Subsequently over 150 Catholics died on the scaffold between 1581 and 1603. Edmund Campion, English Jesuit and priest, Catholic by faith was arrested and brought before the Queen Elizabeth. She asked him if he acknowledged her to be the true Queen of England. He replied in the affirmative. He explained, "In condemning us, you (Elizabeth) condemn all your own ancestors, all our ancient bishops and kings, they were catholic. She ordered him to relinquish Catholic Christianity, which he refused. Campion was sentenced to death as a traitor. He received the death sentence with the *Te Deum laudamus* - a song of the Church. Campion was hanged, drawn and quartered (cut into pieces when still alive) on December 1, 1581, aged 41.

In 1555, the entrance of Jesuits into England was prohibited by law. In due course, more or less all the bishops were dismissed; all Jesuits and Catholic priests were driven from the kingdom. Catholics were forbidden to take public office and were deprived of their lands and fortunes. Side by side, the execution of priests began. In 1592, the Popish Recusants Act was passed by the Parliament that forbade the Catholic recusants (those Catholics who refuse to attend Anglican services of the Church of England) from moving more than five miles from their house or otherwise their all property would be forfeited. Every person being above the age of sixteen years, born within any her majesty's realms or dominion was required to take the following Oath of Allegiance:

'I ... , do humbly confess and acknowledge, that I have grievously offended God in contemning her majesty's godly and lawful government and authority, by absenting myself from church, and from hearing divine service, contrary to the godly laws and statutes of this realm: and I am heartily sorry for the same, and do acknowledge and testify in my conscience, that the bishop or see of Rome has not, nor ought to have, any power or authority over her majesty, or within any her majesty's realms or dominions: and I do promise and protest, without any dissimulation, or any colour or means of any dispensation, that from henceforth I will from time to time obey and perform her majesty's laws and statutes, in repairing to the church, and hearing divine service, and do my uttermost endeavour to maintain and defend the same.'[240]

In Ireland, situation was more harsh and miserable. All efforts were made to transform Catholic Ireland to Anglicanism. Some 90% of Ireland's native population was Catholic. In the process, almost all lands owned by Irish Catholics were confiscated and given to the Anglican settlers of England. Under the penal laws no Irish Catholic could sit in the Parliament of Ireland.

In 1559 the Irish Parliament passed both the Act of Supremacy and the Act of Uniformity; all the Catholic priests were ordered to leave Dublin; the use of images, candles and beads was prohibited. Dermond O'Hurley, Archbishop of Cashel, Ireland was arrested and tortured to relinquish Catholic Christianity. His legs were thrust into boots filled with oil and salt, beneath which a fire was kindled. Some groans of agony were wrung from the victim, and he cried aloud, "Jesus, son of David, have mercy on me!" but refused to relinquish his religious faith. When the boots were pulled off, the flesh was stripped from his bones. Then he was secretly taken out and hanged in June, 1584.

Being staunch Catholic, Mary, Queen of Scots (1542 - 1587) became one the main casualty of the Queen Elizabeth. Mary had previously claimed the throne against Elizabeth and was

considered the legitimate sovereign of England by the Catholic populace. Henry VIII made war with Scotland so as to marry his son Edward VI to Mary by force. But she was smuggled to France where she married to Francis, Dauphin of France who ascended the French throne as King Francis II in 1559; subsequently Mary became Queen consort of France. After the death of King Francis II in December 1560, Mary returned to Scotland. Four years later, she married her first cousin, Henry Staurt, Lord Darnley, but in February 1567, Darnley was found murdered in the garden of his residence by an explosion.^[241] James Hepburn, Earl of Bothwell was generally believed to have killed Darnley, with whom Mary married in April 1567. Bothwell had divorced his first wife Jean Gordon twelve days ago.

It was shocking for the people of Scotland that Mary had married the man who was accused of murdering her husband. As a result, twenty-six Scottish Lords turned against Mary and her husband Bothwell. At the time, Mary was pregnant, she miscaaried twins probably on July 23, 1568. Next day on July 24, 1567 she was forced to abdicate in favour of her one-year-old son James by Darnley. As a result, she fled to England seeking the protection of her first cousin Queen Elizabeth. Instead of helping Mary, Elizabeth confined her in various castles, ordering an inquiry beyond her jurisdiction into the conduct of the Scottish lords and the question of whether Mary was guilty of Darnley's murder. A commission of inquiry was held in between October 1568 and January 1569. As Queen of Scotland and former Queen consort of France, Mary refused to acknowledge the power of any court to try her and refused to attend the inquiry personally (she sent representatives) but Elizabeth forbade her attendance anyway.

Mary was a staunch Catholic, it was the main problem and threat for Elizabeth, who wanted to convert the Scottish people to Anglicanism – the state religion of England. On January 26, 1569, Mary was moved to Tutbury Castle and placed in the custody of

the Earl of Shrewsbury. In May 1569, Elizabeth attempted to mediate the restoration of Mary in return for guarantees of the Anglican religion, but Mary rejected the deal.

In 1570, Pope Pius V excommunicated Elizabeth and permitted all faithful Catholics to do all they could to depose her. In response,[242] Thomas Howard, 4th Duke of Norfolk, John Lesley, Bishop of Ross and Roberto di Ridolfi, former banker - all devoted Catholics planned to overthrow Elizabeth, with the military assistance of Spain. But, King Phillip of Spain disagreed and disapproved even the papal bull; he feared it would "prompt Elizabeth to take reprisals against Catholics." Subsequently the plot failed prematurely.

But the fearful Queen Elizabeth decided to murder Queen Mary of Scotland in a legal framework. As a result, the puppet Parliament of England passed the 'Safety of the Queen Act' in 1584 by which any attempt to injure the Queen or any pretender to the throne, the person found guilty, was to be pursued to death." Henry VIII, father of Queen Elizabeth, for murdering his two wives, including the mother of Queen Elizabeth adopted the similar procedure based on fabricated grounds.

In October 1586, Mary was put on trial for treason under the Queen's Safety Act before a court of 36 noblemen, including Cecil, Shrewsbury and Walsingham.[243][244][245] Mary denied the charges and told her triers, "Look to your consciences and remember that the theatre of the whole world is wider than the kingdom of England." [246] She drew attention to the facts that she was denied the opportunity to review the evidence, that she was denied access to legal counsel and that as a foreign anointed queen she had never been subject of England and thus could not be convicted of treason.

Mary remained in custody of Elizabeth for eighteen and a half years. Finally she was declared guilty for plotting to assassinate Elizabeth. On February 1, 1587, Elizabeth signed the death warrant. Just after six days, on the evening of February 7,

1587,^{[247][248][249]} Mary was told that she was to be executed the next morning. She spent the last hours of her life in prayer. The scaffold was erected in the Great hall. The executioners (named Bull and his assistant) knelt before her and asked forgiveness. She replied, "I forgive you with all my heart, for now, I hope, you shall make an end of all my troubles." Her servants, Jane Kennedy and Elizabeth Curle and the executioners helped Mary to remove her outer garments. As she disrobed she smiled and said that she "never had such grooms before ... nor ever put off her clothes before such a company." She was blindfolded by Kennedy with a white veil embroidered in gold, knelt down on the cushion in front of the block, on which she positioned her head. Her last words were, "Into thy hands, O Lord, I commend my spirit." The head fell to the ground and the body was covered in her blood, until it was taken away and washed. Her entrails, removed as part of the emblaiming process. Later her body was left in a lead coffin, buried in a Protestant service at Peterborough Cathedral, in July 1587.

The murder of Mary, Catholic Queen of Scotland shocked the entire Catholic Europe. Even it was a clear message to the Catholics of England, either to relinquish their faith and convert to Anglicanism or face death. It was also a great threat to Catholicism that was loosing its space. Pope Sixtus V rigorously took many steps against Elizabeth, but miserably failed. He in desperation 'donated the sovereignty of England' to the monarch of Spain, Philip II, authorized him to invade and conquer England, reestablish there Catholicism. In this regard, Pope also offered him a huge amount of one million ducats as financial aid. Philip II already had the privilege to become King of England, when he was married to sister of Elizabeth, Mary I, Catholic Queen of England, in 1554.

The Pope declared the invasion on England a 'Crusade,' authorized King Philip II to collect 'Crusade Tax' and hire the services of crusaders and conquistadors. Previously, on December 4, 1154 Pope Adrian IV donated Ireland to King

Henry II of England. The Pope Adrian gave Henry the right to invade and assume control over Ireland. Later the Pope Alexander III, who succeeded Adrian IV, used the words for Henry II as "illustrious King of England stirred by Divine inspiration." Both the Popes branded the people of Ireland as barbarous, uncivilized, undisciplined, wicked and ignorant of the Divine Law. Subsequently Henry II claiming the Divine Will and sovereignty over the island, invaded Ireland in 1171, forced the local Irish rulers to accept him as their overlord.

Prior to this, Pope Alexander VI donated the sovereignty of all the lands over the American continent (west and south of a pole-to-pole line 100 leagues) to the monarchs of Spain through a Bull *Inter caetera* issued on May 4, 1493.[250] As a result, Spain occupied most of the territory of South, Central and North Americas (modern day 17 countries). After capture, the defeated populations of the Americas were converted forcibly to Catholicism at death penalty. Finally Spain established one of the largest empires in the world.

Philip II, King of Spain, at the command of the Pope prepared to invade England with a mission to overthrow Queen Elizabeth and reestablish Catholicism there. Pope Sixtus V gave his blessing to what was called "The Enterprise of England," which he hoped would bring back into the fold of Rome. On May 28, 1588, the Spanish Armada with around 130 ships, 18,000 soldiers and 8,000 sailors carrying 1,500 brass guns and 1,000 iron guns, set sail from Lisbon, Portugal under the command of the Duke of Medina Sidonia. An army of 30,000 men stood in the Spanish Netherlands for their assistance.

The Armada did not reach the southern coast of England until July 19. In the meantime, Francis Drake attacked the port of Cadiz in Spain and destroyed 37 naval and merchant ships that had assembled there to attack England.[251] In England, 200 naval ships were ready to face the challenge, under the command of Lord Howard of Effingham, close related to the Queen Elizabeth.

He was assisted by Sir Francis Drake, Sir John Hawkins, Sir Martin Frobisher and others. Out of 200 ships, only 34 belonged to the Royal Fleet, the rest were private property owned by Charles Howard, Francis Drake and others.

To encourage her forces, Queen Elizabeth personally went to Tilbury during the war and on August 9 she gave to them what is probably her most famous speech:

“My loving people ... I am come amongst you as you see at this time, not for my recreation and disport, but being resolved, in the midst and heat of battle, to live or die amongst you all - to lay down for my God and for my kingdoms, and for my people, my honour and my blood even in the dust. I know I have the body of a weak and feeble woman; but I have the heart and stomach of a king - and of a King of England too, and think foul scorn that Parma or Spain, or any prince of Europe, should dare to invade the borders of my realm; to which, rather than any dishonour should grow by me, I myself will take up arms - I myself will be your general, judge and rewarder of every one of your virtues in the field... We shall shortly have a famous victory over those enemies of my God, of my kingdom, and of my people.”

The Spanish Armada was decisively defeated by the forces of Elizabeth. Francis Drake, the most notorious sea pirate played the leading role. Even the change in wind direction prompted the Spanish to break off from the battle and retreat towards the North Sea. They were pursued as far as Scotland.

By the end of war, only 10,000 Spanish soldiers could survive; most of them died by slaughter, drowning, starvation and disease. The Spanish also lost around half of their ships.[252][253] When news of the doomed Armada finally reached Rome, Pope Sixtus refused to pay the promised one million ducats to the King of Spain.

It was a great achievement of Elizabeth and her administration; she broke hegemony of Spain then considered a superpower. As a result, Elizabeth emerged as one of the most dominating rulers of Europe. Now she prepared to complete conquest of Ireland. Her father Henry VIII had forcibly established Kingdom of Ireland and merged its territory with England. Prior to this, Henry VII extended law of England over the entirety of Ireland and assumed supremacy over the existing Irish parliament. The Irish people repeatedly resisted and revolted at a great loss of lives for maintaining their independence as well as their language, law, culture and Catholic faith. But the monarchs of England never allowed the people of Ireland to live in peace. The Pope and the Catholic monarchs of Spain miserably failed to help the Irish nation. Under the circumstances, some of the powerful lords of Ireland decided to defend their mother-land. They knew, it was a suicidal attempt to fight with the well organized forces of Elizabeth. Still they prepared for war just to record their word that they, at any cost would not surrender their independence and faith. In a move, Hugh O'Neill, Earl of Tyrone and Hugh Roe O'Donnell ruler of Tyrconnell landed with around 5,000 soldiers in the battle ground against England.

At the same time, a Spanish fleet in support of the earls entered the harbour with 3,400 troops under the command of Don Juan del Aguila. Finally there was a war known as the Battle of Kinsale – part of the Nine Years Irish War, fought on October 2, 1601, about 4 miles north-west of the town Kinsale. From Elizabeth side, Lord Mountjoy arrived with around 3,000 warriors and within few hours, over 1,000 Irish soldiers were slaughtered. The Spanish captain Don Juan del Aguila surrendered to Mountjoy without taking proper part in the war. For all practical purposes, the Spanish army arrived simply to surrender. The first and most important result of the war was the disarmament of the native Irish lordships and the Queen Elizabeth acquired for the first time full control over the Irish nation. The Irish culture, law and language were replaced; all

out efforts were made to transform the Catholic Irish nation to Anglicanism. In due course most of the Irish lords lost their lands and hereditary authority. An estimated half a million acres (2,000 km²) land was confiscated from the Irish chiefs and handed over to tens of thousands of non Irish settlers brought from England, Scotland and Wales - the incident is recorded in the Plantation of Ulster. As a result, most of the Irish chiefs fled Ireland with their families known as the Flight of Earls.

Now the victorious Queen Elizabeth invited the business community of England to invest in the projects "colonization, massacre and genocide of the Native Americans, Africans and Asians." [254][255] Subsequently, many individuals and the Joint Stock Companies jumped into the field. As a result, various Proprietary Colonies emerged in the North America owned by a person or family, along with the Charter Colonies and Royal Colonies (personal property of the monarchs of England). Sir Walter Raleigh - a writer and poet, privately funded the colony known as Roanoke colony.

These were the days, when more or less all the European monarchs were busy in enslaving the entire humanity under the cover of trade, fraud, force and famines. Portugal and Spain were the forerunner and had established their empires. Queen Elizabeth also jumped in the field. In 1583, Newfoundland (in Canada) became England's first possession in North America and one of the earliest permanent colonies in the New World when it was claimed for Queen Elizabeth by Sir Humphrey Gilbert (c. 1539 - 1583) half-brother of Francis Drake, adventurer of England.[256]

He was one of the most valued persons for Queen Elizabeth, who authorized Drake in 1577 for raids against the Spanish colonies on the west coast of South America. He repeatedly attacked Isthmus Panama to loot the Spanish ships arrived from *South America loaded with gold and silver for landed transportation to Spain.* [257]

On August 24, 1578 Drake is said to have landed on an island in the Straits of Magellan that was named Elizabeth Island (after Queen Elizabeth I). Again in September 1578, Drake named another island off the tip of South America as "Elizabeth Island." Drake was a leading slave trader assisted by his second cousin Sir John Hawkins. They used to kidnap and purchase young male and female from West Africa on large scale for sale to the Spanish authority in South America, then rulers of this land.

On June 17, 1579, Drake landed on the coast of California and named the land 'Nova Albion (New Britain). By July 22, 1580 Drake made multiple stops on his way toward the tip of Africa, eventually rounded the Cape of Good Hope, and reached Sierra Leone.

Drake captured a Spanish ship, near Lima, laden with 25,000 pesos of gold looted from the people of Peru, amounting in value to 37,000 ducats of Spanish money. Drake captured one more ship 'Cacafuego' sailing west towards Manila loaded with 36 kg of gold, 26 tons of silver and other precious jewels. Half of his income was paid to Queen Elizabeth. At one point, the Queen's income surpassed the rest of the crown's income for the entire year. Drake presented the Queen a jewel made of gold enameled by African diamond. In return, the Queen gave Drake her portrait with a jewel, an unusual gift to bestow upon a commoner. On April 4, 1581, Queen Elizabeth personally came over the Drake's ship *Golden Hind* on the River Thames, dined on board and awarded him a knighthood, thereby insulting the king of Spain, in whose opinion Drake was a pirate, who also offered a huge prize amount of 20,000 ducats for his arrest either dead or alive.

On 25 March 1584, Queen Elizabeth I (the "Virgin Queen") granted Sir Walter Raleigh (c. 1554 – 1618) a charter for the colonization of an area of North America which was to be called, in her honour, Virginia.

On June 6, 1586, Drake raided the Spanish fort of San Augustin in Spanish Florida. Drake also plundered the port of Santo Domingo (now capital of the Dominican Republic) and captured the city of Cartagena de Indias, in present-day Colombia.

On 31 December 1600, Elizabeth gave a charter to the East India Company, under the name "The Governor And Company of Merchants of London Trading into the East Indies".^[258] The Company in 1601, landed in the Indian Sub-continent during 1601, to occupy and conquer the present-day India, Pakistan, Bangladesh, Myanmar (Burma), Sri Lanka, Hong Kong, Singapore, half of the mainland China, where millions of Chinese were killed in the aftermath of the Opium Wars and Taiping Rebellion.

On March 24, 1603, Elizabeth I, Queen of England and Ireland died at Richmond Palace. A few hours later, James VI of Scotland was proclaimed as James I, King of England and Ireland, whose mother Mary, Queen of Scotland was beheaded by Elizabeth I.

Elizabeth I was interred in Westminster Abbey in a tomb she shares with her half-sister, Mary. The Latin inscription on their tomb, "Regno consortes & urna, hic obdormimus Elizabetha et Maria sorores, in spe resurrectionis", translates to "Consorts in realm and tomb, here we sleep, Elizabeth and Mary, sisters, in hope of resurrection". (At the time, Latin and French were considered the most prestigious languages, whereas the English was in the growing process).

James I

1603 - 1625

On March 24, 1603, Queen Elizabeth I died unmarried,[260] a few hours later, James VI of Scotland was proclaimed as James I, King of England and Ireland, whose mother Mary, Queen of Scotland was beheaded by Elizabeth I. It was rumored that the Queen Mary had sexual relations with her secretary David Rizzio, who fathered King James. On March 9, 1566 Rizzio was dragged from Mary's room and stabbed to death managed by Henry Staurt, Lord Darnley, husband of Queen Mary. Within few weeks, Lord Darnley was found dead on February 10, 1567 perhaps in revenge for Rizzio's death. It was suspected that Mary had some secret hand in the murder of her husband. Mary married without losing time to the third person James Hepburn, Earl of Bothwell on May 15, 1567 who was generally believed killer of her husband.

As per official data, Queen Mary's father King James V of Scotland married Margaret Tudor, elder daughter of King Henry VII, sister of King Henry VIII of England. This is how, Mary herself became claimant to the throne of England, eventually her son James IV of Scotland became King of England as James I.

On July 11, 1603 Scotland was merged with England as a single kingdom, under one monarch, one parliament, one religious faith and language.[261] James named the united monarchy as Great Britain and styled himself 'King of Great Britain.'

On February 22, 1604, King James ordered all Roman Catholic clergy (Jesuits, Seminaries and other Priests) to leave his kingdom by March 19, 1604.[262]. Once again, serious efforts were

made to transform by force the Catholic population of the Great Britain to Anglicanism. All Catholics were commanded to attend the non Catholic - Anglican services. Under such drastic situation, one Robert Catesby planned to assassinate King James I by blowing the House of Lords during the opening of the Parliament on November 5, known as the Gunpowder Plot of 1605. Catesby's father had been persecuted by Queen Elizabeth for refusing to conform to the Church of England. In the plot, Robert Catesby was joined by Thomas Wintour, John Wright, Guy Fawkes, Thomas Percy and some eight others.

On November 4, 1605, around midnight, one of the conspirators Guy Fawkes was captured in the cellar of the Parliament building with 36 barrels of gunpowder. He was sent to the Tower of London, who after severe torture gave away the names of the fellow conspirators. As a result, Robert Catesby and Thomas Percy were arrested and shot dead. Their bodies were exhumed and decapitated and their heads exhibited on spikes outside the House of Lords. Finally the rest conspirators were captured and sent to the Tower. On January 30, Robert Wintour, Everard Digby, John Grant and Thomas Bates were tied to hurdles and dragged through the crowded streets of London to St Paul's Churchyard.[263] Digby was stripped of his clothing, wearing only a shirt. He was castrated, while still alive disembowelled and then quartered. The following day, Thomas Wintour, Ambrose Rookwood, Robert Keyes and Guy Fawkes were hanged, drawn and quartered.[264] Fawkes jumped from a ladder while climbing to the gallows, breaking his neck, thus avoiding the agony of the hanging and quartering. Steven Littleton was executed at Stafford along with his cousin Humphrey. Henry Garnet's execution took place on May 3, 1606.

Later the Parliament of England passed the Popish Recusants Act 1606, thereby forbade Catholic Christians from practising the professions of law and medicine and it allowed magistrates to search their houses for arms. All the Catholics of England, Scotland, Wales and Ireland were treated less than slaves and

required to take the following Oath of Allegiance at the pain of death, in favour of King James:

"I, (name) do truly and sincerely acknowledge, profess, testify, and declare in my conscience before God and the world, that our Sovereign Lord King James, is lawful and rightful King of this realm ... And that the Pope neither of himself, nor by any authorities of the Church or See of Rome, or by any means with any other hath any power or authority to depose the King ... And I do make this recognition and acknowledgement heartily, willingly, and truly, upon the true faith of a Christian: So help me God.[265]

The Oath of Allegiance 1606 was proclaimed law on June 22, 1606. Further laws were also passed; thereby the Catholics lost civil rights, freedom of worship, right to vote, holding property and restricting their role in public life.

As offshoots of persecution against the Catholics of England, many a new sect emerged in Christianity, exclusively Puritanism, Pilgrims, Calvinists, Presbyterian and others. They all sought to "purify" the State Anglican Church and return to its original state and to practice Christianity as was done in the times of the Apostles. The Pilgrims distinguished themselves from the Puritans that they sought to "separate" themselves from the Anglican Church, rather than reform it from within. They also broke away from the Church of England because they felt the Church violated biblical principles of true Christians. The Church of England was under strict rule of the Monarch so their actions were considered treasonous.

On April 10, 1606, King James I issued a charter for each of the Virginia Companies, London and Plymouth intended to colonise land for England in the Americas, under the cover of 'trade.' Subsequently following colonies were established: Plymouth

Colony (modern state of Massachusetts) established in 1620; South Falkland in 1623, Saint Kitts Island in 1623; Virginia Colony in 1624; New Hamps - Dorchester Company Colony in 1624 and Barbados in 1625.

The 'Jamestown' (in Virginia, North America) named after King James I, was the first permanent Colony in the Americas, settled mainly by the Puritans of England brought by the Virginia Company of London on May 14, 1607. In 1619, the first documented Portuguese ship brought African slaves - men, women and children in Jamestown.[266]

In 1611, the British East India Company based at London, obtained permission from the Moghal Emperor Jahangir for establishing a factory in Masulipatnam, on the Eastern coast of India. Next year in 1612, the Company again obtained permission to establish another factory in Surat, Gujrat. The city was made the seat of a 'presidency' of the East India Company to conquer the Indian subcontinent through Trade, fraud and force.

On February 8, 1622 King James dissolved the Parliament following a dispute involving parliamentary criticisms of a marriage proposed by James of his son Charles to Princess Maria Anna of Spain. In 1623, the Saint Kitts Island situated in the West Indies was forcibly occupied by the forces of England followed by French, in 1625. The island was inhabited by the Native Americans Kalinago - part of Carib nation. When the Natives resisted forced occupation of their mother-land, the Anglo-French forces jointly made genocide of the Kalinago Natives, launched a surprise night-time attack in their beds, killing the entire native population except the young girls and women, held for their personal use. In retaliation, thousands of Caribs from the neighbouring islands attacked the Anglo-French forces but all were tracheriously killed and piled high into a mound over the beach. It was told that the blood of the Caribs ran down

Bloody River for three days. This is why the area was named Bloody Point.

In 1625, a group of migrants arrived from England in a ship *Olive Blossom*, occupied Barbados for their King James I. The island is situated in the western area of the North Atlantic then inhabited by Kalinago Natives.

When James VI was only King of Scotland, he was betrothed to the fourteen-year-old Princess Anne, sister of Christian IV, King of Denmark. James VI sailed to Copenhagen and was married on November 23, 1589. While returning from Denmark to Scotland they experienced terrible storm. As a result, they had to take shelter in Norway for several weeks. The admiral of the escorting Danish fleet blamed the storm on the wife of a high official in Copenhagen. Subsequently Witchcraft Trials were held in Denmark. One of the first Danish victims was Anna Koldings who, under pressure, divulged the names of five other women.^[267] They all confessed that they had been guilty of sorcery in causing storm. They further confessed that they sent devils to climb up the keel of the king's ship. Later two women were burnt alive as witches at Kronborg. Over the issue, King James also decided to set up his own tribunal in Scotland.

A maid named Gillis Duncan under severe torture confessed of being a witch and accused many others of witchcraft. Very soon more than a hundred suspected witches in North Berwick were arrested, and many confessed under torture to having met with the Devil in the church at night, attempting to sink the King's ship.

The two most significant accused persons were Agnes Sampson, a respected and elderly woman and Dr. John Fian a schoolmaster and scholar. Both refused to confess, but were put to severe torture. On November 28, 1590 Sampson was brought before King James VI and a council of nobles. She denied all the charges, but after being tortured horrifically, she finally confessed. She was fastened to the wall and an iron instrument

with four sharp prongs forced into her mouth. She was finally strangled and burned alive as a witch. Dr. Fian also suffered severe torture. He endured having his fingernails forcibly extracted then having iron pins thrust therein. Finally taken to the Castlehill in Edinburgh and burned alive at the stake on December 16, 1590. The North Berwick Witch Trials continued and around 300 innocent women were burnt alive, who were blamed for sinking the ship of King James with the assistance of a Devil. Factually who was Devil, who played the real role of Devil; one can assess the mind-set of the sadist monarch James, claimant of the Divine authority after God. King James obviously believed in the existence of witchcraft and wrote a book on Witchcraft "Daemonologie" published in 1597.

King James was quoted as saying,

"Kings are little gods on Earth, chosen by God to rule in accordance with the doctrine of the "Divine Right of Kings; they have power of life and death over all their subjects in all matters. They are accountable to God only ... so it is a crime for anyone to argue about what a king can do." [268]

James also suggested the members of Parliament that they had no right to debate his authority.

King James ordered for a new translation of the Bible which became known as the Authorised King James's Version of the Bible, composed by a committee of scholars between 1607 and 1611.

Throughout his life King James had close relationships with male courtiers, allegedly a bi-sexual which caused debate among historians about their exact nature, even criticized by the Scottish Church leaders. Many of the James's biographers conclude that Esme Stewart, (later Duke of Lennox), Robert Carr (later Earl of Somerset) and George Villiers (later Duke of Buckingham) were

his lovers. In the 1580s, King James openly kissed Francis Stewart Hepburn, Earl of Bothwell. Contemporary sources clearly hinted their relationship was a sexual one.

After the age of about fifty, James suffered increasingly from arthritis, gout and kidney stones. He also lost his teeth. James finally died on March 27, 1625 and buried in Westminster Abbey.[269] James was succeeded by his second son, Charles.

Charles I

1625 – 1649

After the death of King James I, the ownership rights of England, Scotland, Wales and Ireland were transferred to his son Charles I, who was designated as king on March 27, 1625.

In 1614, Prince Charles was married to a Catholic Bourbon princess Henrietta of France. When Charles became king, she being a Catholic refused to attend the coronation ceremony performed in Anglican faith that was held at Westminster Abby on February 2, 1626. Later, the entire enslaved population of his realm was ordained to an Oath of Allegiance (or Obediance) for Charles I:

"I, (name) doe truely and sincerly acknowledge, professe, testifie and declare in my conscience before God and the world, That our Sovereigne Lord King CHARLES, is lawfull King of this Realme ... And that the Pope neither of himselfe, nor by any Authority of the Church or See of Rome, or by an other meanes with any other, hath any power or Authority to depose the king ... That I do from my heart abhor, detest and abjure as impious and Hereticall this

damnable Doctrine and Position, That Princes which be Excommunicated or deprived by the Pope, may be Deposed or Murthered by their Subjects, or any other whatsoever. And I doe make this Recognition and acknowledgement heartily, willingly, and truely, upon the true Faith of a Christian. So help me GOD.” [270]

Nearly after one month of his accession to the throne, Charles aged 26 summoned Parliament in April 1625 and demanded over £700,000 to assist his brother-in law Christian IV of Denmark, who was married to Elizabeth, sister of Charles I. But both the Commons and Lords refused. As a result, Charles decided to snatch the required amount from the citizens, under the cover of Forced Loan. Those who refused to pay or anyone who opposed the policies of Charles were jailed without cause for undetermined periods of time, including five knights, Sir Thomas Darnell, Sir John Corbet, Sir Walter Erle, Sir John Heveningham and Sir Edmund Hampden. When five of those Knights tried to secure their freedom by issuing a writ of habeas corpus, King Charles argued that he had the power to commit people to prison at its own discretion, without stating a specific, legal reason. When the issue caused an upheaval among the subject populations, Charles I imposed martial law that was extended to the entire nation by 1627. He also continued to collect custom duties, known as tonnage and poundage without the consent of Parliament.

King Charles followed the foot steps of his father, claimed Divine Right of King, who considered his subject populations less than slaves. He ignored the Parliament never cared to take its guidance for imposing new taxes and other important matters.

When Charles failed in his efforts, he turned to Parliament in 1628. The House of Commons immediately expressed its determination to secure a strong commitment from the King to

observe the rule of law. Sir Edward Coke initiated the 'Petition of Right' based upon earlier statutes and charters. He also directly blamed the Duke of Buckingham, Chief Minister of the realm and favourite of King Charles I, "he is the cause of all our miseries, let us set down the causes." [271]

During the session, other members raised the issue of forced loans, the trial of the five knights, the billeting of soldiers and martial law. Subsequently on April 1, 1628 the forced loans were declared illegal including the imprisonment of the five knights, whether imprisoned by the King or the Privy Council. The Petition of Right was unanimously passed by the Commons on April 3. On May 8, the Petition was formally presented to the Lords accompanied by a bill for subsidies for the King. On May 12, the Lords received a message from King Charles, expressing his reservations and insisted that if Parliament accepted that then this "would soon dissolve the foundation and frame of our monarchy [and] without overthrow of our sovereignty...we cannot suffer this power to be impeached". [272]

On May 24, 1628 the Lords voted to join with the Commons on the Petition of Right and approved it unanimously on May 26. It was sent to the king for acceptance.

On June 7, while appearing within Parliament, Charles following a reading of the full Petition, saying "soit droit fait comme est desire" – the phrase normally used in the acceptance of a Parliamentary bill. This was met with widespread exaltation, ringing of church bells and the lighting throughout the kingdom. The Petition of Right declares that the subject population of England have various "rights and liberties", [281][282][283][284] and provides that no free individual should be imprisoned or detained unless a cause has been shown, and that soldiers or members of the Royal Navy should not be billeted in private houses without the free consent of the owner and that no person should be forced to provide a gift, loan or tax without an Act of

Parliament. In relation to martial law, its use was restricted, except in war or direct rebellion.

On June 16, the Commons at last voted the taxation for which Charles was so desperate. However, they still refused to grant Charles tonnage and poundage for life. But Charles, still insisting on his ancient customary right to levy tonnage and poundage. Charles I dissolved the Parliament that very same day and did not call another one for 11 years.

During 1637, King Charles I imposed the Book of Common Prayer over the populace of Scotland. The move was violently resisted; a riot broke out in Edinburgh. The General Assembly of the Church of Scotland met in Glasgow during 1638 firmly abolished the Prayer Book and expelled the Anglican Bishops from Scotland as suspect agents of the crown. In retaliation, King Charles I ordered to invade Scotland in 1639. Subsequently there was a war in between England and Scotland known as the First Bishop War.

On August 20, 1640 the Scots invaded England, routed the Charles' forces; two days later Newcastle fell without resistance. With Newcastle in Scottish hands, London's coal was cut off, that created a great panic in public. An initial treaty between the two nations was signed at Ripon on October 26, 1640 thereby King Charles I agreed to pay an indemnity of £850 per day until the details of the peace were concluded.

On November 3, 1640, King Charles reluctantly called the famous Long Parliament, after a long period of eleven years in order to raise funds payable to the Scots.^{[285][286]} But the Parliament refused to support Charles, considering him as an incompetent monarch. As a result of non payment, the Scots invaded England for the second time on August 20, 1640, known as the Second Bishops' War. Around 20,000 Scots, under the command of Leslie and Montrose occupied the whole of Northumberland and County Durham in north East England.

Under the situation, Thomas Wentworth, Earl of Strafford and some other favorites of king were impeached. They had abolished the high courts of the Star Chamber, originally been a court of appeal and the High Commission. A 'Triennial Act' was also passed which provided that Parliament be called into session at least once every three years –without the King's summons, if necessary. Other laws passed by the Parliament made it illegal for the king to impose taxes without Parliamentary consent. Finally, the a law was passed thereby forbidding the King to dissolve Parliament without its consent, even if the three years were up. King Charles had no choice but to accept demands of the Parliament. Subsequently his favorite Thomas Wentworth, 1st Earl of Strafford (1593-1641) was executed for treason while the Archbishop of Canterbury, William Laud (1573-1645), was impeached and imprisoned.

On May 3, 1641, Parliament (House of Commons) passed a bill requiring all those over the age of 18 to sign the 'Protestation' - an oath of allegiance to the Church of England, as well as loyalty to the Parliament and to the King. On July 30, 1641, the House of Commons passed another resolution that all those who refuse to sign the Protestation were unfit to keep property and hold state office. The Protestation reads:

"I, do, in the presence of Almighty God, promise, vow, and protest to maintain, and defend as far as lawfully I may, with my Life, Power and Estate, the true Reformed Protestant religion (Anglicanism), expressed in the Doctrine of the Church of England, against all Popery and Popish Innovations within this Realm, contrary to the same Doctrine, and according to the duty of my Allegiance, His Majesties Royal Person, Honour and Estate, as also the Power and Privileges of Parliament, the lawful Rights and Liberties of the Subjects ... and further, that I shall, in all just and honourable ways, endeavour to preserve the Union of the Three Kingdoms of England, Scotland and Ireland: and neither for Hope, Fear, nor other Respect, shell relinquish this Promise, Vow and Protestation."^[287]

According to the Protestation, the subject Catholic nations of England, Scotland, Ireland and Wales were commanded at the pain of severe punishments to relinquish their faith in favour of Anglicanism. Those who refuse to take the oath would be identified as 'Catholics' unfit to hold the state office, in the army and in Church.

On August 10, 1641, Treaty of London was signed under which King Charles agreed that the Scots would receive a huge amount of £300,000 as recompense for the wars.

Now King Charles turned to Ireland, decided to punish and rob the entire land of the Catholic Ireland. Its majority populace refused to acknowledge the Anglicanism - state religion of England. Subsequently an 'Adventurers Act' was passed on March 19, 1642 by the Parliament of England that invited the settlers and others to invest simply £200 for which they would receive 1,000 acres (4 km²) of land. Around 2,500,000 acres (10,000 km²) of Irish land was set aside for this purpose. The entire country of Ireland is roughly 20 million acres (81,000 km²). It was an attempt to crush financially the the entire Irish nation. Under the situation, the Irish people prepared to liberate their nation from the servitude of England.

Ireland declares Independence

In May 1642, an independent 'Catholic Confederation of Ireland' was established during a national synod held at Kilkenny, attended by the leading nobles, clergymen and gentry. By the summer of 1642,^{[288][289]} the Irish Confederate controlled more than two-thirds of Ireland. In October 1642, the first Confederate General Assembly was called headed by Nicholas Plunkett as acting chairman, where House of Lords (nobles and clergy) and House of Commons (gentry) were formed. To gain support from

Catholic powers in Europe, Confederate ambassadors were appointed and recognised in France, Spain and the Vatican. Irish soldiers serving in foreign armies were advised to return back to serve their own mother-land. In November 1642, a Supreme Council of twenty-four members was elected, with six representatives from each of the four provinces Leinster, Ulster, Munster and Connacht. Richard Butler, Viscount Mountgarrett, was elected President. For minting money, tax collection and civil and military administration, extra arrangements were made.

At the time, a large number of non Irish and non Catholics were living in the different parts of Ireland, holding around 40% of Irish land. They were brought from England, Scotland and Wales to bring the Catholic Irish 'in manority' thereby changing the demography of Ireland. They were mainly settled in the provinces of Ulster and Munster. Immediately after the Irish independence, thousands of those 'settlers' were attacked and expelled from their homes by the Irish peasantry,^[290] whose lands were occupied by them. Such communal uprisings, in due course spread to the rest of the country. Munster was the last region to witness such disturbances, where Sir William St Leger (1586 -1642) President of Munster appointed by King Charles I, imposed Martial law, killed a large number of Irish people; many were hanged with great severity, often without much proof of guilt.

In November 1641, the Portadown Massacre took place at what is now Portadown, County Armagh. Up to 100 mostly non Catholics settlers were killed in the River Bann. In retaliation, there were massacres at Islandmagee in County Antrim and on Rathlin Island where several hundred Catholics were killed. Even the Catholic prisoners and civilians were killed by the settlers at Kilwarlin woods near Newry; they were lined up on the banks of the river and butchered to death without any legal process.

In the County Cavan, its residents forbade the use of English language and replaced place names with the original Irish language. The killing of the settlers was brought under control to some degree in 1642, when the Irish Catholic forces arrived in Ulster. They hanged several rebels for attacks on civilians.

To subdue the Irish nation, King Charles I sent a large army by mid-1642, numbered over 20,000 to Dublin. But because of the Civil War in England, English troops were withdrawn from Ireland in late 1642 and a military stalemate ensued. On January 4, 1642, King Charles entered the House of Commons with an armed unit of soldiers, made a failed attempt to arrest five of his leading opponent members of Parliament on the grounds of high treason. On January 10, 1642, Parliament seized London, and Charles fled to Windsor Castle. After sending his wife and eldest daughter to safety abroad in February, he travelled northwards, hoping to seize the military arsenal at Hull, but was forced to withdraw.[291][292][293][294]

In March 1642 Parliament passed the Militia Ordinance which put the control of the local militia (known as the Trained Bands) in the hands of Parliament. King Charles headed north for York. Subsequently the English Civil War started in 1642 between forces loyal to King Charles I and those who served Parliament. There were three major battles in the English Civil War – Edge Hill (1642) Marston Moor (1644) and Naseby (1645). Both King and Parliament raised large armies, between 20,000 to 70,000 soldiers. In the aftermath of these three Civil Wars, England and Wales claimed about 84,830 lives in combat, with a further 127,000 deaths (including some 40,000 civilians), bringing the figure to 200,000 deaths.

In 1644, Charles lost control of the north of England as a result of a major defeat at the Battle of Marston Moor.[295] The combined armies of Parliament and the Scots heavily defeated the Royalists. In June 1645, Cromwell's New Model Army inflicted a fatal blow to the king's army at the Battle of Naseby. Charles did

not recover from this defeat and his cause was lost. In June 1646 the King's wartime capital, Oxford surrendered to the Parliamentary New Model Army. Charles fled in disguise and put himself under the protection of the Scots. They took disadvantage of Charles and sold him to the Parliament of England for £400,000 in January 1647. On November 11, 1647 Charles escaped from Hampton Court but was captured and held prisoner in Carisbrooke Castle on the Isle of Wight.

On January 1, 1649, Charles I was tried at Westminster Hall for crimes against his people, charged as a "tyrant, traitor, murderer and public enemy." [296] He was accused of a 'wicked design' to establish 'an unlimited and tyrannical power to rule according to his will' and had entangled his people in 'unnatural, cruel and bloody wars,' thereby killing an estimated 300,000 people, or 6% of the population.

Whenever Charles was asked to plead, he refused, stating his objection with the words: "no court had jurisdiction over a monarch, that his own authority to rule had been given to him by God and by the traditional laws of England, and that the power wielded by those trying him was only that of force of arms." Charles insisted that the trial was illegal, explaining that, no earthly power can justly call me (who am your King) in question as a delinquent ... this day's proceeding cannot be warranted by God's laws; for, on the contrary, the authority of obedience unto Kings is clearly warranted, and strictly commanded in both the Old and New Testament ... and that the King can do no wrong ... I am sworn to keep the peace, by that duty I owe to God and my country, and I will do it to the last breath of my body; and therefore ye shall do well to satisfy first God, and then the country, by what authority you [try me]." [297] In response the court explained, "the King of England was not a person, but an office whose every occupant was entrusted with a limited power to govern 'by and according to the laws of the land and not otherwise'." Later the court heard over 30 witnesses against the king in his absence and on January 26 condemned

him to death. Fifty-nine of the commissioners signed Charles's death warrant, including Cromwell (who was the third to sign it); Sir Thomas Fairfax, Commander-in-Chief of the new Model Army refused to sign. The following day, King Charles was brought before a public session of the commission, declared guilty and sentenced. Before Charles's beheading, two of his children, Elizabeth and Henry then under custody of the Parliamentarians were allowed to visit their father on January 29.

On January 30, 1649, King Charles was brought to the Palace of Whitehall, where an execution scaffold was erected in front of the Banqueting House. At the last moment, Charles gave a last speech, "I have delivered to my conscience; I pray God you do take those courses that are best for the good of the kingdom and your own salvation." He further clarified,^[298] "a subject and a sovereign are clean different things. I shall go from a corruptible to an incorruptible crown, where no disturbance can be."

At about 2:00 p.m. Charles put his head on the block in front of a huge crowd and was beheaded with one clean stroke. His severed head was exhibited and by the next day, his head was sewn back onto his body, which was then embalmed and placed in a lead coffin, carried to Windsor on the night of February 7. He was calmly buried at Windsor Castle rather than at Westminster Abbey, in the Henry VIII vault alongside the side of Henry VIII and Henry's third wife, Jane Seymour, in St George's Chapel, on February 9, 1649.

Subsequently kingship was abolished, followed by an Act to abolish House of Lords on March 19, declaring England a Republic or Commonwealth. Parliament stated that "the office of the king in this nation is unnecessary, burdensome and dangerous to the liberty, society and public interest of the people." The Commonwealth Council of State appointed Oliver Cromwell commander of an expeditionary force for the subjugation of Ireland that had declared independence.

Republic England

1649 - 1653

The Civil War in England ended with the execution of King Charles I in 1649 at a cost of 300,000 lives. Thereafter England was declared a republic, also known as the Commonwealth of England, ruled solely by parliament without any king, with a smaller Council of State. The dissolution of the 'House of Lords' proved the most risky and dangerous step for the Republic government. The members of the House of Lords were the descendants of the Norman invaders who arrived with William the Bastard during the Norman invasion of England in 1066. From generation to generation, continuously for about six hundred years, they remained 'Lords' (defender of Norman monarchy) as well as the owners of the entire landed property and other resources of England. During this long period, they crippled morally, physically and economically the original 'Celt population' of England.

In 1649, when the House of Lords was abolished, its members were still the most powerful and had an authority to destabilize the Republic system. It was the period when all the nations all over the world were ruled by the monarchs. The Parliament of England - rulers of England adopted policies more or less similar to the 'Roman Senate' that controlled the Roman World for centuries, through 'army commanders' designated as 'Tribune' whose main job was to conquer, loot and enslave maximum number of nations. Similarly the Parliament of England appointed army commander Oliver Cromwell with the same purpose in March 1649. Firstly he was assigned the job to conquer Ireland, enslave its population, impose over them the

state religion and language of England. Cromwell was the follower of the Puritan sect of Christianity that was developed recently in England in contrast with the Anglicanism. He was also staunch opponent of Catholic faith and considered the Catholics as heretics, liable to death.

In August 1649, Cromwell landed in Ireland with 12,000 New Model Army mainly raised from the 'Adventurers' - investors in the 'commercial venture' of the Irish conquest. For over four years, Cromwell carried a series of bloody sieges and battles, which included massacres at Drogheda and Wexford and slaughters of unarmed innocent Irish people - men, women and children. By 1653, when the last formal surrender of the war took place, Ireland had been devastated, the population decimated and the economic infrastructure destroyed. Around 618,000 Irish died out of a total population of 1,400,000 or about 40% of the Irish population.

After the conquest of Ireland, Cromwell imposed an extremely harsh 'settlement' with death penalty on the Irish Roman Catholic population. All those implicated in the revolt - Confederate Ireland were executed. Those who participated in the war of independence had all their land confiscated; thousands were transported to the West Indies as indentured labourers. The practice of Catholicism was banned and the Catholic priests were executed on large scale. Around 50,000 Irish widows, orphans, members of the Church of Ireland, Ulster Presbyterians and prisoners of war were sold as indentured labourers or slaves. They were transported to the North America and Caribbean to work on Sugar Plantations. Thousands of Irish soldiers, who fought for their mother-land, left the country to find service in other countries, exclusively in France and Spain. In addition, Catholic populations were forbidden to live in their towns. In July 1653, they were ordained to shift to the most isolated and poorest province of Connacht and the county of Clare. The penalty for not transplanting was death by hanging.

After the conquest of Ireland, the Parliament of England had to pay 18 months wages to the New Model Army and thousands of those who lent money to Parliament for the subjugation of Ireland, which included the members of Parliament of England, merchants, tradesmen, agents and suppliers of arms and ammunition. Instead of cash, all of these people received land in Ireland against their dues. For this purpose, around two and a half million acres land of the Irish Catholics was confiscated and transferred to the invading people of England. Before the wars, Irish Catholics had owned 60% of the land in Ireland, whereas by the time of the Oliver's Conquest,^[299] they owned its only 8%. In order to facilitate the redistribution, a survey of the land was begun and an Act for settling Ireland was passed in August 1652, thereby Ireland emerged physically less than a 'colony' of England.

During this period, more than 100,000 Irish children between the ages of 10 to 14 were forcibly snatched away from their mothers and sold as slaves in the West Indies, Virginia and New England. Ironically, Ireland's population fell from about 1,500,000 to 600,000 in one single decade (1641 to 1652). In this decade, 52,000 Irish (mostly women and children) were sold to new settlers in Barbados and Virginia. The crime was covered under the head as "Indentured Servants." England continued to ship tens of thousands of Irish slaves for more than a century.

In the meantime, situation in Scotland turned around as the Parliament of Scotland conditionally proclaimed Charles II as King of Scots just six days after the beheading of his father Charles I on February 5, 1649. Charles II was required to accept the Presbyterian faith for the entire realm. He took 18 months to finalise the deal, finally accepted the Scot's terms, signing an agreement at Breda on May 1 and reaffirming it by oath just before his landing in Scotland on June 23, 1650. He immediately prepared to acquire the throne of his father and invaded England with a large force of Scots under the command of David Leslie.

To counter Charles II, the ruling Parliament of England assigned the job to Sir Thomas Fairfax, Commander in Chief of the New Model Army, who refused and resigned. Under such a critical and helpless situation, the Parliament raised the status of Oliver Cromwell then second in Command to Commander in Chief on June 25 placed the entire burden over him to defend the Republic England. John Lambert was made second-in-command in place of Oliver Cromwell.

On June 28, Cromwell set off for Scotland at the head of an army of 16,354 men. He crossed the border on July 22, 1650 and the battle of Dunbar began at about four o'clock in the morning of 3 September 1650. Although Scotland's army had less than 6,000 regular soldiers in June 1650, they swiftly raised their forces to 22,000, under the command of Sir David Leslie.

The Battle of Dunbar lasted two hours. Cromwell smashed the Scot army, killing 3,000 Scottish soldiers, taking another 10,000 prisoners, against a loss of fewer than 20 warriors of the Republic army and 60 wounded. Cromwell marched unopposed to Edinburgh and occupied the Scottish capital. Later Cromwell reported to Parliament that the "chase and execution" of the fleeing Scots had extended for eight miles.

Subsequently Scotland was absorbed into the Republic; as a result, England, Scotland and Ireland became part of a single State - a Republic ruled by a single Parliament based at London. To control Scotland, it was handed over to about 10,000 Republic armedmen.

Again in 1651, to regain the throne of England, Charles II and his Scottish allies arranged about 16,000 warriors, aided by Scottish allies under Sir David Leslie. They crossed the border into England on August 5, 1651 followed by Cromwell who surrounded them at Worcester with a force of 28,000 soldiers of the New Model Army. Subsequently there was a war known as the Battle of Worcester fought on September 3, 1651.[300]

In the aftermath of war, most of the Scottish and Royalist leaders were killed; only the Duke of Buckingham, Lord Wilmot and Charles II himself succeeded in escaping to the Continent. Up to 3,000 Scots were killed during the battle and a further 10,000 were taken prisoner against a loss of few hundred soldiers of the New Model Army. Many of the Scottish prisoners of war died of hunger and disease; around 8,000 Scottish prisoners were deported to the New World in New England, Bermuda, and the West Indies to work for landowners as slaves or indentured labourers.

Protectorate England

December 16, 1653 - 1658

The army commander Oliver Cromwell secured the borders of the Republic but the Parliament of England miserably failed to maintain republican form of government – a sovereign state, to be ruled by the elected representatives of the people. They surrendered power into hands of Cromwell – an armyman believing in the power of sword. The Parliament had received many proposals for democratic form of government such as the Levellers – one of the major political movements. They presented their manifesto “Agreement of the People” for the Sovereignty, Safety, Peace and Freedom of the Republic.[301] They demanded the right to vote, common land ownership, everyone being equal under the law, religious tolerance, equal parliamentary constituencies, the right not to be conscripted into the army and the frequent convening of new Parliaments. Some additions were made in the manifesto by the Agitators - extremists in the army and political allies of the Levellers. In the meantime, “A Remonstrance of Many Thousand Citizens” was published by

William Walwyn and Richard Overton in July 1646, considered as the founding document of the Leveller's movement. It expounded the theory of the "Norman yoke", which maintained that the people of England had enjoyed full constitutional rights and liberties until the Norman conquest, and that William the Bastard or Conqueror and his successors were tyrannical usurpers who held on to power by virtue of the oppressive laws that they had imposed.

The Leveller's manifesto was presented to the General Council of the New Model Army and to the Rump Parliament in January 1649 with the following additions: Suffrage for all men aged 21 and over, except servants, beggars and Royalists; annual Parliamentary elections; members serve only one term; no one to be punished for refusing to testify against themselves (the right to remain silent); all those on trial have the right to call witnesses in their defence; trials to be in front of twelve sworn men of the neighbourhood, freely chosen; no hindrance to free trade; no one to be imprisoned for debt; a written constitution and for a government answerable to the People rather than to King or Parliament; the abolition of death penalty except for murder.

The authors of the original Agreement were imprisoned in the Tower of London charged with treason and inciting mutiny. They included John Lilburn, William Walwyn, Thomas Prince and Richard Overton. One of the Levellers leaders Thomas Rainsborough, Member of Parliament was killed on October 30, 1648. Robert Lockyer (or Lockier) was hanged on April 27, 1649. Many soldiers were hanged, demanding realization of the Leveller's programme. The three Levellers leaders - William Thompson's brother, Corporal Perkins, and John Church were shot on May 17, 1649.[302]

The Rump Parliament of Republic England subservient to the army commander Oliver Cromwell never cared to study the earlier written constitution of the San Mario Republic that was recently updated on October 8, 1600, based on Six Books. San

Marino is the oldest surviving sovereign state and constitutional Republic in the world, founded on September 3, 301. The nonstitution of the San Mario Republic upholds that, the sovereignty of the Republic shall be vested in the people, who shall exercise it through statutory forms of representative democracy. All shall be equal before the law, without any distinction based on sex or personal, economic, social, political and religious status. All citizens shall have access to public services and elective posts, in accordance with the procedure laid down by law. A person charged with an offence shall not be considered guilty until finally convicted. Human rights shall be inviolable. The law prohibits discrimination based on religion. The Republic recognises civil and political liberties for all. The following shall be guaranteed, in particular: liberty of person and sanctity of the home, freedom of residence and of emigration, freedom of association, freedom of expression, freedom of conscience and religion. Privacy of communications, in whatever form, shall be safeguarded. Suffrage shall be universal, secret and direct. All citizens of voting age who satisfy the conditions prescribed by law shall have the right to vote and to stand for election. The Congress of State, which shall be politically answerable to the Great and General Council, shall exercise executive power. It rejects war as a means of settling disputes between States, subscribes to the international conventions on human rights and freedoms and reasserts the right of political asylum. The organs of judicial power established by law shall be guaranteed full independence in the exercise of their functions. The authorities of the State shall operate with due regard for each other's independence and competence. The Republic shall safeguard the institution of the family, having its basis in the spouses' moral and legal equality. All mothers shall be entitled to the community's assistance and protection. The law shall guarantee children born out of wedlock full spiritual, legal and social protection, affording them the same treatment as legitimate children. The Great and General

Council, made up of 60 members, shall exercise the legislative power, direct and control the Government policy. The Council's members shall be elected by universal and direct suffrage for the duration of the legislature. The Captains Regent (Head of State), appointed by the Great and General Council, shall be the supreme guarantors of the constitutional order. All members shall be elected for an initial period of four years by a two-thirds majority of the Great and General Council's members, from among university professors of legal subjects, magistrates and law graduates with at least twenty years of experience in the field of law.

The world's oldest surviving republic, San Marino – a tiny State is situated on the Italian Peninsula, on the north-eastern side of the Apennine Mountains.

The Rump parliament of Republic England could have also consulted successful working of the Dutch Republic that emerged for a time as Europe's greatest economic power. An 'Act of Abjuration' was signed on July 26, 1581,^[303] thereby the people of Seven Provinces of the Habsburg Netherlands absolved of their oath of allegiance to their overlord, Philip of Spain, for having violated the Social Contract with his subjects. It stated that by oppressing and violating the ancient rights of his subjects, Philip was considered to have vacated his thrones, subsequently the formal declaration of independence was issued, thereby giving birth to the Dutch Republic. The Act prohibited the use of the name and seal of Philip in all legal matters and of his name or arms in minting coins. It gave authority to the Councils of the provinces to henceforth issue the commissions of magistrates. The Act relieved all magistrates of their previous oaths of allegiance to Philip, and prescribed a new oath of allegiance to the States of the province in which they served, according to a form prescribed by the States General. The monarchs of Spain resisted for over sixty five years in recognizing the Dutch independence, at last in 1648. At the time,

the Dutch Republic dominated world trade, possessed one of the strongest and fastest navies, breaking the Portuguese sphere of influence on the Indian Ocean and in the Orient. The Dutch Republic developed liberal society, believing in the philosophy of freedom, freedom of conscience, dignity of each individual; even they treated Jews as equals. They declared that each person shall remain free in his religion and that no one shall be investigated or persecuted because of his religion.

However, the Parliament of Republic England could not lay down the basis for the smooth running of the Republican form of government. Finally, Cromwell in frustration led an armed force into the House of Commons on April 20, 1653, forcibly dissolved the Rump Parliament, addressing its members in the following insulting manner:

“You have sat too long here for any good you have been doing. It is high time for me to put an end to your sitting in this place, which you have dishonored by your contempt of all virtue, and defiled by your practice of every vice. Ye are a factious crew and enemies to all good government. Ye are a pack of mercenary wretches and would like Esau sell your country for a mess of pottage, and like Judas betray your God for a few pieces of money. Is there a single virtue now remaining amongst you? Is there one vice you do not possess? Ye have no more religion than my horse. Gold is your God. Which of you have not bartered your conscience for bribes? Is there a man amongst you that has the least care for the good of the Republic? Ye sordid prostitutes have you not defiled this sacred place and turned the Lord's temple into a den of thieves, by your immoral principles and wicked practices? Ye are grown intolerably odious to the whole nation. You were deputed here by the people to get grievances redressed, are yourselves become the greatest grievance. Your country therefore calls upon me to cleanse this Augean stable, by putting a

final period to your iniquitous proceedings in this House; I command ye therefore, upon the peril of your lives, to depart immediately out of this place. Go, get you out! Make haste! Ye venal slaves be gone! So! Take away that shining bauble there, and lock up the doors. In the name of God, go."

After dissolving the Rump Parliament, Cromwell moved for a 'theocratic state' thereby setting up a short-lived nominated assembly known as the Parliament of Saints or Barebone's Parliament. The new assembly was inspired by the Jewish Sanhedrin (Assembly or Council). In the Hebrew Bible, Moses and the Israelites were commanded by God to establish courts of judges who were given full authority over the people of Israel,^[304] who were commanded by God to obey every word the judges instructed and every law they established. On these lines, Cromwell tried to establish such an assembly guided by a more 'godly men'. In May 1653, letters in the name of the Lord-General and the Army Council were sent to Congregational churches in every county in England to nominate those they considered fit to take part in the new government. At the same time, Cromwell and the Council of Officers announced that they would be guided by God's providence in doing so: "as we have been led by necessity and Providence to act as we have done, even beyond and above our own thoughts and desires, so we shall... put ourselves wholly upon the Lord for a blessing."^[305]

When the Parliament of Saints met from July until December 1653, its national policies were dominated by the 'Fifth Monarchist' who declared the assembly as the start of Christ's Kingdom on Earth. The Fifth Monarchists took their name from a prophecy in the Book of Daniel that four ancient monarchies (Babylonian, Persian, Macedonian, and Roman) would precede the kingdom of Christ. They referred to the year 1666 and its relationship to the biblical 'Number of the Beast' indicating the end of earthly rule by carnal human beings. Their theory maintained that 'four world rulers' had already come and gone,

the last empire would be established by the returning Jesus as King of Kings and Lord of Lords to reign with his Saints on earth for a thousand years.

However, the Parliament of Saints did not last more than six months as Cromwell created another Nominated Assembly, following 'Instrument of Government' drawn up by General John Lambert and his fellow officers, known as the only codified constitution of England. Oliver Cromwell was sworn in as Lord Protector ruling the four nations of England, Scotland, Wales and Ireland from December 16, 1653 with the advice and help of a Council of State and a Parliament, which had to be called every three years. Over the decision, Levellers and Agitators were shocked; they regarded it a betrayal of the principles for which the civil wars were fought.

Cromwell divided England into 11 military districts ruled by Army Major Generals mostly recruited from the New Model Army. These major generals and deputy major generals were called "godly governors." Legislation was also introduced against blasphemy, cursing, drunkenness and adultery. Theatres were closed. Liberty of worship was granted to all except Roman Catholics.[306]

In 1655, Cromwell sent an expedition to the Spanish West Indies and conquered Jamaica, in the Caribbean Sea. Following the Battle of the Severn, fought on March 25, 1655, Cromwell overwhelmed colonies in the Americas,[307] such as the New England Confederation, the Providence Plantation, the Virginia Colony and the Maryland Colony - all settled by the migrants of England. In 1643, a new country named 'New England Confederation' was established over the soil of the Americas by uniting the four colonies: Massachusetts Bay, Plymouth, Connecticut and Haven. It was an independent country ruled by the Puritan migrants of England. But the forces of Cromwell conquered and made the land subordinate to the British authorities.

In 1657, the Parliament of England, fearful of Cromwell, finally lost its senses, its will and vision, again turned to 'kingship' voted shamelessly to invite Cromwell to become king. However, after many weeks, Cromwell rejected the Parliament's foolish offer preferring to describe himself as a 'constable or watchman' of the Republic. It was one of the greatest revolt and a unique example in the history of mankind, when 'monarchy' was abolished in England and replaced by the republican form of government. It was also a great message for the entire humanity then under the despotic monarchs. The people of England already had passed for over six hundred years under the severe servitude of the foreign Norman rulers since the invasion and conquest of William the Bastard in 1066.

On March 11, 1656 Cromwell created the 'Other House' similar to the House of Lords, consisted of 70 members, nominated by him.^[308] The House Commons disagreed with the proposal; as a result Cromwell dissolved Parliament on February 4, 1658.

After eight months, Cromwell died aged 59 on September 3, 1658 in Whitehall.^[309] His coffin was escorted by over 30,000 soldiers and was buried on November 23, 1658 in Westminster Abbey where kings and queens were buried. He was succeeded as Lord Protector by his son Richard.

Richard Cromwell Lord Protector

1658 – 1660

On death of Oliver Cromwell on September 3, 1658, his son Richard Cromwell, aged 32 became Lord Protector of England, Scotland and Ireland assisted by the 13-man Council of State. He appointed his brother Henry Cromwell as lord lieutenant of Ireland.

Richard inherited a national debt of £2,500,000 and an annual shortfall of £300,000. Pay arrears for the armed forces stood at nearly £900,000. Richard called the Third Protectorate Parliament in December 1658 in an attempt to deal with the Protectorate's deepening financial crisis. The Parliament assembled on January 27, 1659. Richard was recognised as Lord Protector by the Parliament by 223 votes to 134.^[310]

On April 21, 1659 Parliament began debating the re-organisation of the army and the formation of a new militia. Things grew worse as Parliament refused to vote for the higher taxation needed to support the army at its current size and declined to release imprisoned Quakers - who had a belief in the universal priesthood of all believers.

Major-General John Desborough (brother in law of Richard Cromwell) called soldiers and forced Richard to dissolve Parliament and entrust himself to the army, to which Richard reluctantly agreed.

The Third Protectorate Parliament was dissolved on April 22, 1659 and the army seized power in a coup. They again forced

Richard to call the former Rump Parliament that his father had ousted in 1653. The Rump Parliament was convened on May 7, 1659 that dismissed Richard and he officially abdicated on May 25, 1659 just eight months after his posting.^[264]

On October 13, 1659 the Rump Parliament was dissolved by the army headed by General Lambert and Charles Fleetwood. They locked the doors to the Palace of Westminster and stationing armed guards outside. Richard called upon the army, but the soldiers unanimously followed their officers. Richard was held under house arrest at Whitehall Palace. Lambert and Fleetwood created a 23-member Committee of Safety to govern the realm in place of the Rump.

In an effort to maintain the republican Parliamentary administration, Sir Arthur Haselrig appealed to other Army generals to support the Rump against John Lambert. In response General George Monck, commander in-chief in Scotland, declared that he was ready to uphold Parliament's authority and took control of London. At the other side, Lambert marched north against Monck in November 1659, but most of Lambert's army deserted.

On December 24, 1659 the frustrated army units resolved to restore the Rump Parliament that met again on December 26, 1659. When Sir Thomas Fairfax former Commander-in-chief emerged from retirement and declared his support for Monck, the situation turned around in favour of Monck that became almost unanimous. George Monck directed that the best solution to the government problems was to bring back the monarchy and Charles II. On March 9, 1660 the reinstated Long Parliament resolved that a New Assembly will be elected to deal with the restoration. In April 1660 Charles II issued the Declaration of Breda, promising a general amnesty (50 people were specifically excluded) arrears of pay for the army,^[266] confirmation of land purchases during the Interregnum and 'liberty of tender consciences' in religious matters.

Parliament accepted the Declaration and Charles II was proclaimed King on May 8, 1660. Monck then presided over the Restoration of 1660. Same year Charles's youngest brother, Henry and sister, Mary died of smallpox.[270]

Charles landed at Dover on May 26, 1660 and entered London three days later. He was crowned at Westminster on April 23, 1661. As the crown jewels of England had been melted down by Cromwell at the establishment of the protectorate, a new set had to be made for the occasion. This is how, all the descendants of the Norman invaders who invaded and occupied England in 1066, under William the Bastard, reconquered this land under Charles II, again emerged as its owners, rulers, lords, erals and dukes.

Richard retired into private life. In the summer of 1660 he left his wife and family in England and went into exile on the Continent. Regarded as a potentially dangerous person by the Restoration government, he remained abroad until 1680. He returned to England after about 20 years and lived quietly at Cheshunt in Hertfordshire, under the assumed name of John Clarke until his death at the age of 85, at Cheshunt in Hertfordshire in 1712.

Charles II

1660 – 1685

On arrival of Charles II as King of England, Scotland and Ireland, his beheaded father Charles I was venerated a Saint by the Anglican Church of England and all legal documents were post-dated as though Charles II had succeeded on his father's death in 1649.

Later Charles II ordered that Oliver Cromwell's body should be dug up and put on 'trial' as a traitor and regicide (killers of the king). On January 30, 1661, Cromwell's body was removed from Westminster Abbey, along with that of John Bradshaw,^[272] President of the High Court of Justice and Henry Ireton, Cromwell's son-in-law and General in the Parliamentary army during the English Civil War. They were posthumously tried for high treason, found guilty and hanged from a gallows at Tyburn (near Hyde Park, London). The bodies were then thrown in a common grave and the heads were displayed on a twenty foot spike at Westminster Hall, where they remained for over 24 years until 1685 when a storm caused the spike to break, tossing the heads to the ground below.

What was left with the body of Cromwell remains a mystery. Many people began to question whether or not the body mutilated at Tyburn was in fact that of Cromwell. These doubts arose because it was assumed that between his death in September 1658 and the exhumation of January 1661, Cromwell's body was buried and reburied in several places to protect it from vengeful royalists. The stories suggest that his bodily remains are buried in London, Cambridgeshire, Northamptonshire or Yorkshire.

Major-General Thomas Harrison was found guilty of the regicide (killer) of Charles I. He had been (judges) to sign the death warrant of the king in 1649. He was hanged, drawn and quartered on October 14, 1660, followed by ten others including Thomas Venner for high treason on January 19 and 20.

In May 1662 Charles married the Catholic Princess of Portugal - Catherine of Braganza. She brought in her dowry, Tangier (territory in North Africa), the Seven islands of Bombay (in India), two million Portuguese crowns in cash (about £300,000), trading privileges for England in Brazil and in the East Indies, while Portugal obtained military and naval support against Spain and liberty of worship for their Catholic Princess Catherine. The couple was married at Portsmouth in two ceremonies - a Catholic one conducted in secret, followed by a public Anglican service.

On October 17, 1662, Charles sold Dunkirk (in Northern France) to his first cousin King Louis XIV of France for about £375,000. It was a channel port and a valuable strategic outpost.^{[308][309]}

In the meantime, reports of plague around Europe began to reach England causing panic across the kingdom. By July 1665, the Great Plague killed an estimated 100,000 people, almost a quarter of London's population. In September, the death toll reached a peak of 7,000 per week. At the time, London population was estimated at 460,000 in 1665. However, the officials recorded 68,596 cases of plague, a figure short of the true total. During the Plague, trade and business had completely dried up and the London streets were empty of people except for the dead-carts and the desperate dying victims. King Charles II, his family and his court fled the city for Salisbury, moving on to Oxford in September. Plague cases continued to occur sporadically until the summer of 1666.

In 1666, from Sunday, September 2, to Wednesday, September 5, the Great Fire of London destroyed much of the City of London.^[310] It consumed 13,200 houses, 87 parish churches, St Paul's Cathedral and most of the buildings of the City authorities. Death toll is unknown but traditionally thought to have been small, as only six

deaths were reported. For the fire, Catholics were blamed, although it had actually started in a bakehouse in Pudding Lane shortly after midnight on Sunday and spread rapidly west across the City of London. It also threatened King Charles II's court at Whitehall. London was finally reconstructed on essentially the same street plan used before the fire.

On May 26, 1670, Kings Charles and King Louis XIV of France met in Dover, England to discuss a secret Treaty of Dover. Finally it was signed and sealed on June 1, 1670. As per the treaty, Charles II, King of England will make a public profession for his conversion to a Catholic faith, and will receive a sum of two millions of crowns and the support of 6,000 French troops, to suppress those who may oppose the conversion.^[311] Charles used some of the money to bribe certain members of Parliament. Those members supported Charles' pro-Catholic policies, became known as Tories by their opponents Whig in Parliament. King Charles was also to receive further amount of £300,000 a year to enable him to join a war against the Dutch. At the time, both the Kings will declare war against the United Provinces. The King of France will attack by land and receive the help of 6000 men from England. James, brother of Charles, the Duke of York had already converted to the Roman Catholic faith along with his first wife Anne Hyde.

In 1672, as a first step for conversion to Catholicism, King Charles issued a Declaration of Indulgence, using his prerogative powers to suspend all the penal laws against Catholics and other religious dissenters. On April 6, 1672, Louis of France declared the Third Anglo-War and Charles followed suit the next day. The War failed to go off as originally planned. The money sent by Louis to Charles did not come close to enough. Desperate for funds, Charles was forced to call Parliament into session for the first time in over two years.

In 1673, when Parliament reconvened, they opposed the Declaration of Indulgence on constitutional grounds by claiming that the King had no right to arbitrarily suspend laws passed by the Parliament.

So as to receive funds for the ongoing Third Anglo-Dutch War, Charles withdrew the Declaration. He also agreed to the 'Test Act' thereby excluded all Catholics from both Houses of Parliament. The public officials were also required to receive the sacrament under the forms prescribed by the Church of England.

In 1674, Charles was pressurized by the Parliament to sign the Treaty of Westminster ending his involvement in the third Anglo-Dutch War.

In 1678, Titus Oates, an Anglican minister announced that he had discovered a Catholic Plot to kill King Charles II, even accusing the Queen of complicity.^[312] Oates claimed that Charles was to be replaced by his Roman Catholic brother, James. He went on to argue that after James came to the throne, Anglicans would be massacred in thousands. As a result, eighty Catholics were arrested and accused of taking part in the plot. Several innocent individuals were executed before it was revealed that Titus Oates had been lying.

Despite four pregnancies, Queen Catherine, wife of Charles II produced no children. But Charles fathered at least 14 illegitimate children by various mistresses, including Lady Castlemaine, Nell Gwyn, Lady Portsmouth and Lucy Walter.

To get rid of the Norman monarchs of England, a plan was prepared in 1683, by a large number of noble persons, members of Parliament, revolutionary activists and several Whig leaders, known as the Rye House Plot. As per plan, it was decided to assassinate at a time both the King Charles II and his Catholic brother James, near the Rye House, that was located north-east of Hoddesdon, Hertfordshire, about eighteen miles from London. It was leased by a republican and Civil War veteran, Richard Rumbold.^[313] They placed a force of men in the grounds of the house to attack the king and his brother as they passed by on their way back to London from the horse races at Newmarket. The royal party was expected to make the journey on April 1, 1683, but there was a major fire in Newmarket on 22

March, which destroyed half the town. The races were cancelled, and the King and his brother returned to London early. As a result, the planned attack never took place.

On June 12, 1683, the plot was publicly discovered and the royal declaration of the heinous nature of the plot was issued on July 27,^[314] following arrests on large scale and searches for arms. Finally Sir Thomas Armstrong, member of Parliament, Henry Cornish, Sheriff of the City of London, James Holloway, Richard Rumbold, Thomas Walcot, John Rouse, John Owen and John Ayloffe were hanged, drawn and quartered. Elizabeth Gaunt was burnt alive at the stake.^{[315][316]} Further, Baillie of Jerviswood, Richard Nelthorpe, Richard Rumbold were hanged. Lord William Russell and Algernon Aidney, former Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports and Algernon Sydney were executed by beheading.

Sir John Cochrane, John Lovelace, 3rd Baron Lovelace, Edward Norton and Nathaniel Wade fled to Holland, David Melville, 3rd Earl of Leven, George Melville, 1st Earl of Melville, Robert Ferguson fled to the Netherlands, Ford Grey, 3rd Baron Grey of Werke escaped from the Tower; John Locke and Patrick Hume, 1st Earl of Marchmont fled to the Netherlands; Arthur Capell, 1st Earl of Essex cut his own throat in the Tower of London. In all, around 250 most important personalities of England were killed, executed, beheaded, burnt alive and hanged, drawn and quartered for the safety of the King Charles II.

On February 6, 1685, Charles suffered a sudden stroke and died in Whitehall Palace, London, aged 54.^[317] His sudden illness and death led to suspicion of poisoning in many minds, including one of the royal doctors. On his death bed, Charles was converted to Catholicism and received by the Roman Catholic Church. He was buried in Westminster Abbey on February 14, 1685 and succeeded by his Catholic brother James II.^[318]

His wife Queen Catherine survived her husband for many years; finally returned to Portugal in 1692, where she spent her last years as Regent of the country during the incapacity of her brother, King Pedro. Catherine finally died in 1705.

King Charles II granted a series of charters to the British East India Company thereby raised its status as of a 'sovereign state,' authorized it to invade and conquer the lands in India then governed by the Moghul Empire, and to mint money, to command fortresses and troops, to form alliances, to make war and peace and to exercise both civil and criminal jurisdiction over the acquired areas in India. King Charles II also leased the islands of Bombay (India) to the Company for a nominal sum of £10 paid in gold.^[319] This territory was brought by the Queen Catherine with her as dowry.

In 1670, King Charles II granted control of the entire Hudson Bay drainage basin in North America to the Hudson's Bay Company by royal charter, and named the territory 'Rupert's Land,' after his cousin Prince Rupert of the Rhine, the company's first Governor. The Hudson's Bay Company, under the cover of fur trade, occupied in due course more than 3 million square miles of the American lands (mostly in modern Canada), emerged as the largest landowner in the world, holding 15% of North American acreage. In the Americas, the city of Charleston, the Province of South Carolina and South Kingston town are named after King Charles II.

King James II

1685 - 1688

James II, Catholic King of England and Ireland and King of Scotland as James VII, from February 6, 1685 until he was deposed in 1688. The second surviving son of Charles I, he ascended the throne upon the death of his brother, Charles II.

Within five months of the accession of James II, Charles's illegitimate son James Scott, Duke of Monmouth made a failed bid to capture the crown. He landed at Lyme Regis with three ships and eighty-three men on June 11, 1685. In the meantime Monmouth recruited some 4,000 warriors. On July 6, 1685 the two armies met at the Battle of Sedgemoor; Monmouth's force could not compete with the British army and was soundly defeated and captured along with 1400 supporters. They all were sentenced to death. Out of them around 300 were hanged, drawn and quartered, more than 500 were simply hanged and their remains were displayed on spikes in Dorchester and other towns around Dorset. A woman named Elizabeth Gaunt was burnt alive to death.^[320] The remaining rebels were transported to the West Indies, considered then a sentence equivalent to death.

On July 15, 1685, Monmouth was executed on Tower Hill, by Jack Ketch, one of the sadist hang man. It is said that before laying his head to the block Monmouth specifically bade Ketch to finish him at one blow, but Ketch inflicted multiple blows with his axe, the victim rising up reproachfully - a ghastly sight that shocked the crowd. The first blow inflicted only a slight wound. The Duke struggled, rose from the block and looked reproachfully at the crowd. The head sank down once more. The

stroke was repeated again and again; but still the neck was not severed and the body continued to move. Two more blows extinguished the last remains of life; but a knife was used to separate the head from the shoulders.

King James II attempted to promote the Roman Catholic faith by appointing Catholics to important academic posts, and to senior military and political positions. James, believing his Divine Right as King, issued the Declaration of Indulgence in 1687 to suspend the Test Act, which excluded Catholics from political office. The Archbishop of Canterbury and seven other bishops were arrested and tried for sedition, but later acquitted. However, within three years, he alienated majority of the nobles.

The situation blasted again against James II, when his second wife, Mary of Modena, Catholic by faith, gave birth to a son on June 10, 1688 named James Francis, who became first in the line of succession. This raised the prospect that the kingdom would continue to be ruled by a succession of Catholic monarchs. Within less than three weeks of the birth of child, on June 30, 1688, some of the nobles, later known as the 'Immoral Seven' invited Mary II, Protestant daughter of King James II to invade, overthrow her father and occupy England. The letter was dispatched without names and signatures of the invitees as they were to be identified by a secret code. They also intimated in their letter that, "it was widely believed that King James II and his wife were incapable of having children; therefore the birth of a Catholic child was a fraud." They further wrote "that the people of England are generally dissatisfied with the present conduct of the monarch in relation to their religion, liberties and properties ... Your Highness may be assured that there are nineteen parts of twenty of the people, throughout the kingdom, who are desirous of a change."^[321]

Mary II was married roughly a decade ago to a Dutch national, William of Orange during 1677, one of the rulers in Dutch

Republic. However, Mary agreed and manoeuvred with her husband William against her father. In April 1688, Mary's husband began to assemble an expeditionary force believing that the people of England would not react well to a foreign invader.

In November 1688, William wrote an 'open letter' to the people of England in which he disapproved pro-Roman Catholic policy of religious toleration of his father-in-law King James II.^[322]

On November 5, 1688, William landed at Torbay on November 5, 1688 in 463 ships with a Dutch army,^[323] approximately of 14,000 troops which grew with a local support to over 20,000. They advanced on London in what became known as 'The Glorious Revolution'. Upon William's arrival, there was no organised resistance. King James decided not to resist the forces of her daughter Mary and fled to the continent on December 11, throwing the Great Seal into the Thames on his way. While fleeing from England, James was arrested and brought back to London, but his son-in-law William released him on December 23 to escape to France. Subsequently the key officials in the army and navy defected to William's side, including the Lord Churchill of Eyemouth, King James's most reliable commander. Most of the influential noblemen across the country declared their support for the invader, whilst the rest of James' supporters either escaped to France or otherwise disappeared from the scene. This is how William successfully occupied England and the so-called 'Glorious Revolution' became an entirely bloodless coup.

It must be noted that England was a conquered territory rather a 'personal property' of the Norman invaders, descendants of William the Bastard. Family dispute over the Crown had nothing to do with the subject population of England or its officials in civil and military service. They had to serve even their 'enemy' if they become king of England.

Mary II and William of Orange

Mary: 1688 - 1694 and William 1688 - 1702

After the takeover of England, William summoned a Convention Parliament, which met on January 22,^[324] 1689 to discuss the appropriate course of action to rule England. Although his wife Mary ranked first in the line of succession to the throne, but William was determine to reign as King in his own right, rather than as a mere consort. The only precedent for a joint monarchy in England dated from the 16th century, when Queen Mary I married a foreigner Philip of Spain, who remained king of England only during his wife's lifetime, and restrictions were placed on his power. But William demanded that he must remain as king even after his wife's death. When the majority of the Lords proposed to acclaim Mary as sole ruler, William threatened to leave the country immediately.

To resolve the issue, Mary took side of her husband, subsequently the Commons made William to accept the Declaration of Rights: amongst other things, that the Sovereign could not suspend laws passed by Parliament, levy taxes without parliamentary consent, infringe the right to petition, raise a standing army during peacetime without parliamentary consent, deny the right to bear arms to Anglican subjects, unduly interfere with parliamentary elections, punish members of either House of Parliament for anything said during debates, require excessive bail or inflict cruel and unusual punishments. William was opposed to the imposition of such constraints, but he chose not to engage in a conflict with Parliament and agreed to abide by the statute.

On February 13, 1689, Parliament passed the Declaration of Right (later known as Bill of Rights) in which it deemed that King James, by attempting to flee, had abdicated, thereby leaving the throne vacant. The Bill of Rights also settled the question of succession to the Crown. After the death of either William or Mary, the other would continue to reign. Next in the line of succession was, Mary II's sister, Princess Anne and her issue. Finally, any children William might have had by a subsequent marriage were included in the line of succession. Roman Catholics, as well as those who married Catholics, were excluded.

As usual, the Crown was not offered to James's eldest son, James Francis Edward, who would have been the 'heir apparent' under normal circumstances, but to Mary and William as joint sovereigns. William and Mary were crowned together at Westminster Abbey on April 11, 1689,^[325] by the Bishop of London, Henry Compton. Normally, the coronation was performed by the Archbishop of Canterbury, who refused to recognise James's removal. Over 400 clergy and several bishops of the Church of England and Scottish Episcopal Church refused to take oath of allegiance to William.

In Scotland, on the same day of the coronation, the Convention finally declared that James was no longer King of Scotland. William and Mary were offered the Scottish Crown; they accepted on May 11, 1689.^[326] A number of people opposed this, including many of the Highland clans and John Graham, 1st Viscount Dundee.

All the so-called 'Seven Immortal' received their due rewards when William of Orange and his wife Mary took over the Crown of England. The Earls of Devonshire and Shrewsbury were upgraded to the status of Duke, the Earl of Danby became the Duke of Leeds, the Lord Lumley became the Viscount Lumley and Earl of Scarborough, Edward Russell became the Earl of Oxford and Henry Sidney the Earl of Romney.

The removal of Catholic King James II replaced by the Protestant Mary and her Dutch husband William of Orange was not acceptable to the Catholic Irish nation,^[327] and even to the majority of Scotland. Subsequently, Ireland prepared for war to defend their faith and liberty. In March 1689, they invited James II, still King of England to lead the revolt. It was a religious war in between Catholics and Anglicans (not the Protestants) - a Sect in Christianity, introduced by Henry VIII. In Scotland, a series of Jacobite (James) Revolt also took place, where John Graham, 1st Viscount of Dundee raised Highland forces, in support of King James II. In their first Jacobite uprising, they defeated the troops, supporting William of Orange at the Battle of Killiecrankie, fought on July 27, 1689. In the war, about one-third of the Highlander force was killed, and Dundee was fatally wounded and died a month later. The Jacobite advance continued until it was stopped by the royal forces at the Battle of Dunkeld on August 21, 1689.

In the meantime, Jacobites of Ireland recruited around 23,500 armedmen, predominantly peasants. James landed in Ireland in March 1689 with the assistance of 6,000 French troops.

For the Irish nation, it was a matter of life and death, as their sovereignty, Catholic faith and all resources were at stake. The Catholic upper classes had already lost almost all their lands after Cromwell's conquest, as well as the right to hold public office and sit in the Irish Parliament. Under the circumstances, they saw the Catholic James II as a means of redressing these grievances and securing maximum autonomy of Ireland from England. To these ends, the majority of Irish people supported James II.

Finally there was a war in Ireland known as the Battle of the Boney fought in between the Irish Jacobites headed by James II against and his daughter Anne and son-in-law, William of Orange. James chose to place his forces on the River Boyne, around 48 kilometers from Dublin. James was assisted by

Richard Talbot, Lord Deputy of Ireland, along with the French general Lauzun.

William of Orange reached the Boyne on June 29 with 16,000 professional soldiers, hired from Denmark and the Netherlands, equipped with the latest flintlock muskets. There was also a large contingent of French Huguenot troops. In his second command was the Duke of Schomberg, a German, former Marshal of France, who arrived with 20,000 strong troops.

The day before the battle, William himself had a narrow escape when he was wounded in the shoulder by Jacobite artillery. Even in the initial stage of the battle, William's second-in-command, the Duke of Schomberg was wounded twice in the head and shot in the neck; as a result he died instantly. The battle itself was fought on July 1, 1690 at the River Boyne near the town of Drogheda on the east coast of Ireland. As the war began, most of the untrained Irish peasants, raised as soldiers showed their inability to fight with such a well equipped force of William of Orange; they subsequently deserted. In the aftermath of war, only 2,000 died out of over 50,000 warriors, mostly Jacobites. Subsequently William marched into Dublin two days after the battle. After the defeat, James II rode with a small escort to Duncannon and returned to exile in France.

Soon after the battle William issued the Declaration of Finglas, offering full pardons to Jacobite soldiers excluding their leaders. The offer of pardon was rejected. The Jacobite army - around 14,500 soldiers along with their commanders retreated to the city of Limerick, behind the River Shannon. They were followed by William of Orange on August 7, 1690 with a force of 25,000 warriors; they besieged the city.

On August 27, Williams's siege guns blasted a breach in the walls of the city.^[328] In response the Jacobite soldiers and the civilian population (including women and children) lined up the walls and threw stones and bottles at the attackers. After three

and a half hours of fighting, William finally called off the assault. William lost 3,000 soldiers against 400 of Jacobites. Finally, William failed and called off the siege, put up his troops into winter quarters, where another 2,000 of them died of disease. Bitterly disappointed at his failure to break the back of Jacobite resistance, William returned to England. Limerick was to remain a Jacobite stronghold.

Upon King William's return to England, his close friend Dutch General Godert de Ginkell was named Commander in-Chief of William's forces in Ireland and entrusted with further conduct of the war there. Ginkell took command in Ireland in the spring of 1691.

In the following year, again there was a war known as the Battle of Aughrim, fought between the Jacobites and the forces of William of Orange, on July 12, 1691. The battle was one of the bloodiest, participated on both the sides by about 20,000 warriors, out of them 7,000 killed. The Jacobite general Marquis de St Ruth was decaptated by a cannonball. At this point, the Jacobite position collapsed very quickly. Their horsemen, demoralised by the death of their commander, fled the battlefield. They were slaughtered by the William's cavalry; the hill area was covered by the dead bodies.

The William side claimed to have killed 7,000 Jacobite soldiers and officers against their only 600 armedmen. Another 4,000 Jacobites either deserted or were taken prisoner. On October 3, 1691, Treaty of Limerick was signed between the Jacobites and the supporters of William of Orange that concluded the Siege of Limerick as well as the end of the Irish Catholic Jacobite resistance. The terms offered to Jacobites at Limerick were over the surface as more generous, otherwise the entire Irish army was ordained to leave their motherland and exile to some other country. As a result, some 14,000 Jacobites embarked on ships for France, many of them accompanied by their wives and

children. Individual soldiers wanting to join the French, Spanish or Austrian armies also emigrated in what became known as the Flight of the Wild Geese. The Jacobite soldiers also had the option of joining the William army. 1,000 soldiers chose this option. The treaty allowed most Catholic land owners to keep their land so long as they swore allegiance to William of Orange.

It has been said that "the ink was not dry on the Treaty" before William broke it – [329] the civil articles were not honoured. A few Catholic landowners who took the oath in 1691-93 remained protected, but those who did not, were known as "non-jurors" and their loyalty to William was automatically suspect. Starting in 1695, a series of harsh Penal Laws were enacted by the Parliament of Ireland to make it difficult survival for the Irish Catholic gentry. Those laws included banning Catholics from owning weapons, reducing their land and prohibiting them from working in the legal profession.

On February 13, 1692, a massacre took place in Glen Coe, in the Highlands of Scotland. The massacre began simultaneously in three settlements along the glen—Invercoe, Inverrigan and Achnacon. At 5 am on the morning of 13 February 1692 the killing began. Alastair MacIain, 12th Chief of Glen Coe was shot dead as he rose from his bed, his wife was dragged away from her fallen husband and stripped naked. She died the next day. Houses were set alight. Thirty-eight members of the MacDonald clan were killed and 300 fled to the hills, on the grounds that they were not prompt in pledging allegiance to William and Mary. Although the MacDonalds intended to do so, they simply delayed. Another forty women and children died of exposure after their homes were burned. The massacre was led by Captain Robert Campbell, who was ordered by the Special command of the King to fall upon the rebels, the M'Donalds, of Glencoe and put all to the sword under seventy.

In the meantime, rumours grew of William's alleged homosexual relationship with several close male associates, including two Dutch courtiers to whom he granted titles: Hans Willem Bentinck became Earl of Portland and Arnold Joost Van Keppel was raised as Earl of Albemarle. On December 28, 1694, Mary II died of smallpox subsequently William became sole ruler.[330]

On September 16, 1701 James II died of a brain haemorrhage at Saint-Germain-en-Laye, France.[331][332] James's heart was placed in a silver-gilt locket and given to the convent at Chaillot and his brain was placed in a lead casket and given to the Scots College in Paris. His entrails were placed in two gilt urns and sent to the parish church of Saint-Germain-en-Laye and the Jesuit College at Saint-Omer, while the flesh from his right arm was given to the Augustinian nuns of Paris. James's body was laid to rest in a triple sarcophagus (consisting of two wooden coffins and one of lead) at the Chapel of Saint Edmund in the Church of the Benedictines in the Rue St. Jacques, in Paris.

In 1702, William of Orange died of pneumonia, a complication from a broken collarbone following a fall from his horse.[333] William was buried in Westminster Abbey alongside his wife.[334] William was succeeded by Anne, younger daughter of James II.

Queen Anne

1702 - 1714

Upon the death of William Orange in 1702, his sister-in-law Anne succeeded to the throne on March 8, 1702 as Queen of England,^[335] Scotland and Ireland. She was the younger daughter of the deposed Catholic King James II, raised as Anglican.

Anne was married at the age of 18 to Prince George of Denmark, but her 17 pregnancies all ended in miscarriage, stillbirth or the birth of babies who did not live beyond childhood. Only Prince William, Duke of Gloucester survived his earliest years, but he suffered from hydrocephalus and died in 1700, aged 11.

During Queen Anne's reign, under the Acts of Union, kingdom of Scotland lost its identity and was merged with England as a single kingdom, with one parliament on May 1, 1707 and the new kingdom was branded as Great Britain.

The Parliament of Scotland responded to the Act of Settlement by passing the 'Act of Security' which gave the Parliament power to choose the next monarch (if the Queen had no further children) from among the Protestant descendants of the royal line of Scotland.

In retaliation, the Parliament of England responded with the 'Alien Act 1705' which threatened to impose economic sanctions and declare Scottish subjects as 'aliens.' Finally the Parliament (Estates) surrendered and Anne agreed to repeal the Alien Act. New commissioners were appointed in early 1706 to negotiate the terms of a union. The articles of union approved by the commissioners were presented to Anne on July 23, 1706 and

ratified by the Parliaments of Scotland and England on January 16 and March 6, 1707 respectively.

In early 1707, the Scottish Militia Bill was passed by the House of Commons and House of Lords for settling Militia in Scotland, [336] but the Queen Anne exercised her veto powers against the parliamentary bill and refused to give her assent on May 1, 1707. She was suspicious that the proposed militia would be disloyal. These were the days when Anne's Catholic half-brother, James Francis Edward Stuart attempted to land in Scotland with French assistance to establish himself as king. But he was chased by British ships and could not land.

During Anny's reign, the Virginia General assembly of the British colony in North America issued the following declaration in 1705:

"All servants imported and brought into the Country . . . who were not Christians in their native Country . . . shall be accounted and be slaves. All Negro, mulatto (a person of mixed black and white ancestry) and Indian (Native Americans) slaves within this dominion . . . shall be held to be real estate.[337] If any slave resists his master . . . correcting such slave, and shall happen to be killed in such correction . . . the master shall be free of all punishment . . . as if such accident never happened."

Anny died on August 1, 1714 and was buried beside her husband and children in the Henry VII chapel on August 24.[338][339] George, Elector of Hanover, Germany inherited the British Crown in pursuant to the Act of Settlement 1701.

George I

17014 - 1727

After the death of Queen Anne, the ownership rights of the Great Britain and Ireland were transferred to a German Citizen known as George I, whose mother Sophia was the granddaughter of King James I of England through her mother, Elizabeth of Bohemia. He arrived from Hanover, Germany, where he was ruler of the Duchy Brunswick-Luneburg. He ascended the British throne on August 1, 1714 at the age of 54.

One should not forget, that the Great Britain is not a country or State but a personal Estate, personal property of the Crown, transferable only to the descendants of William the Bastard, either they had become Norman, Spanish, Scot, Dutch or German national.

George arrived in Greenwich on September 29, 1714, with a full retinue of German advisors, servants, 18 cooks and two mistresses without his wife Sophia who had been imprisoned for adultery. George was crowned at Westminster Abbey on October 20, 1714.^[340]

George's claim to the throne was challenged by James Stuart, son of the deposed King James II, a Roman Catholic, who had a strong claim to the throne. He was recognised as king of England, Scotland and Ireland by his cousin King Louis XIV of France. James Stuart landed in Scotland in 1715, but was quickly suppressed.

In 1682, George was married to his first cousin, Sophia Dorothea of Celle, daughter of George William, Duke of Brunswick-Luneburg. She bore a son George Augustus (later George II) and a daughter Sophia Dorothea born in 1687. No further

pregnancies as the couple quickly became estranged—George ignored her pretty and young wife, preferred the company of his mistress, Melusine von der Schulenburg by whom he had two daughters in 1692 and 1693 respectively. Sophia Dorothea, meanwhile, had her own romance with the handsome Swedish Count Philip Christoph Konigsmarck.

In July 1694, Sophia's lover Konigsmarck was killed, possibly with the connivance of George and his body was thrown into the River Leine weighted with stones.

Finally George's marriage to Sophia was dissolved, not on the grounds that either of them had committed adultery, but on the grounds that Sophia Dorothea had abandoned her husband. At the time she was twenty-eight years old. Sophia was imprisoned for life in Castle Ahlden in Celle, where she was never allowed to see her two young children. Her daughter Sophia Dorothea was married to the King Frederick I of Prussia on November 28, 1706, who became mother of Frederick the Great.

In 1720, with the fall of the South Sea Company creating economic crisis in England known as the South Sea Bubble. After the War of the Spanish Succession, Britain was granted a license (Asiento) to supply slaves for 30 years to the Spanish colonies with 4,800 slaves per year, under the the Treaty of Utrecht 1713. Out of this deal, Queen Anne was to receive a quarter of profits. Subsequently the company arranged contracts with the Royal African Company for the supply of African slaves to Jamaica.^[341] £10 was paid for a slave aged over 16, £8 for below 16 but over 10. The company shipped 1,230 slaves from Jamaica to America in the first year. On arrival of the first shipment, the local officials refused to accept the Asiento, which had still not been officially confirmed by the Spanish authorities. As a result, the slaves were eventually sold at a loss in the West Indies. This situation created panic in England.

To continue its operation, the company borrowed a huge amount of £200,000 from the investors. In 1714 2,680 slaves and in 1716–17, 13,000 were sold, but the trade continued to be in loss. In 1720 the South Sea Company, with heavy royal and aristocratic investment collapsed, subsequently thousands were financially ruined.

George remained unpopular in England who spent half of his time in Hanover, Germany and was unable to speak English. He rarely attended meetings of the cabinet. In his absence power was vested in a Regency Council rather than his son, George Augustus, Prince of Wales.

In 1726, George's ex-wife, Sophia Dorothea died on November 23, having spent thirty-two years of her life in prison.

During one of his visits to Hanover, George suffered a stroke on the road between Delden and Nordhorn on June 9, 1727 and was taken by carriage to the Prince-Bishop's palace at Osnabrück where he died in the early hours of 11 June 1727 and buried in the chapel of Leine Castle, Germany. Being the descendant of William the Bastard, George simply remained in England as care-taker of the Great Britain and Ireland. George was succeeded by his son George Augustus as George II. [342]

George II

1727 - 1760

After the death of George I, his son George Augustus (German national) was nominated as King of Great Britain and Ireland as George II,^[343] formally crowned at Westminster Abbey on 11/22 October 1727. George refused to travel to Germany for his father's funeral. He was also made Duke of Brunswick-Luneberg (Hanover, Germany) and Prince-elector of the Holy Roman Empire from June 11, 1727. George II spoke French and was schooled in English and Italian.

Since both the George's parents committed adultery and the George's mother was imprisoned for life, as a result George probably never saw his mother.

In 1705, George was engaged to Caroline of Ansbach – a German who arrived in Hanover for her wedding,^{[344][345][346]} which was held the same evening in the chapel at Herrenhausen, Germany. In early 1707, Caroline gave birth to a son, Frederick. Subsequently she bore him three sons and five daughters, seven of whom would live till adulthood. She actively participated in the affairs of kingdom. During his visits to Hanover in 1729, 1732 and 1735, George left his wife to chair the regency council in Britain rather than his son.

In May 1736, George returned to Hanover, which resulted in unpopularity in England;^[347] a satirical notice was even pinned to the gates of St James's Palace decrying his absence. "Lost or strayed out of this house", it read, "a man who has left a wife and six children on the parish."

On November 20, 1737, George's wife Caroline suddenly died. On her deathbed she told her husband to remarry,^[348] to which he replied, "Non, j'aurai des maîtresses!" (French for "No, I shall have mistresses!").^[349] George already had mistresses during his marriage and he had kept informed his wife Caroline about them. Henrietta Howard, later Countess of Suffolk moved to Hanover and remained George's mistress until November 1734. She was followed by Amslie von Wallmoden later Countess of Yarmouth, whose son, Johann Ludwig von Wallmoden may have been fathered by George. Johann Ludwig was born while Amalie was still married to her husband and George did not acknowledge him publicly as his own son.

In 1743, during the War of the Austrian Succession, George at the age of 60 participated in the Battle of Dettingen and thus became the last British monarch to lead an army in battle.

In July 1745, Charles Edward Stuart invaded England claimant to the British throne. He was son of the former Catholic King James II, who was deposed in 1689. Charles was supported by the Irish and Scot units in the French service. They defeated British forces in September at the Battle of Prestonpans and then moved south into England. But, on April 16, 1746 they were decisively defeated by British forces commanded by George's second son Prince William Augustus, near Inverness in the Scottish Highlands. The ravaged troops were routed and Charles escaped to France. Between 1,500 and 2,000 Jacobites were killed and the wounded soldiers were slaughtered. Some 120 common men were also executed. Of the total 3,471 prisoners recorded nothing is known of the fate of 648.^[350] The high ranking "rebel lords" were executed on Tower Hill in London. Prince William earned the title "Butcher." After this war, no further serious attempt was made.

On March 20, 1751 the King's eldest son, Frederick Prince of Wales suddenly died. He was buried on April 13, at Westminster Abbey,^[351] the King did not attend the funeral and Frederick

was largely unmourned by his parents. Frederick was immediately succeeded by the grand son of George, who was soon created Prince of Wales in recognition of his status as heir-apparent.

On June 23, 1757 Bengal was conquered by the employees of the British East India Company headed by Robert Clive – later known as the ‘Father of Corruption.’ He conspired with Mir Jaffar, Commander in-Chief of Bengal who agreed to surrender at the battle field of Plassey in favour of the Company. The war was fought on June 23, 1757 and the 50,000 soldiers of Bengal were defeated by 1,100 European mercenaries and 2,100 Indian sepoys at a loss of 22 Indian sepoys (50 wounded). The ruler of Bengal Nawab Sirajul Dula fled from the battle field but was captured by Mir Jafar's son and was executed.

After the war, Mir Jaffer immediately handed over the entire treasury of Bengal to Robert Clive who walked between heaps of gold and silver, distributed some of its part among the army and navy of the British East India Company and provided gifts of £24,000 to each of its member. The company itself acquired one and half million sterlings, with a further demand of 3 million sterlings. By complying with the demands of the Company, the economy of Bengal completely collapsed. Side by side, the defeated population was also thoroughly looted in the name of taxes. As a result crops drastically failed, one third population of Bengal, Bihar and Oddisa – around ten million people died of starvation between 1769 and 1773.

In 1760, Robert Clive returned to Great Britain with a fortune of at least £300,000 he bought lands in County Limerick and County Clare, Ireland, naming his lands Plassey. Same year Clive received an honorary degree from Oxford University and in 1762, he was awarded an Irish peerage - Baron Clive of *Plassey*.

During these days, French-held and Fench speaking Quebec in Canada was conquered on September 13, 1759, by Major General

James Wolfe for Great Britain. The French were defeated after fifteen minutes of battle. The battle caused the deaths of the top military commander on each side: French General Montcalm died the next day from his wounds and the British General James Wolfe was struck with three shots that ended his life.

By October 1760, King George II was blind in one eye and hard of hearing.^[352] King George II died at the age of nearly 77 while seated on the lavatory on October 25, 1760.^[353] He reigned for thirty-three years and was buried at Westminster beside his much loved wife, Caroline of Anspach. He was succeeded by his grandson George III.

George III

1760 - 1820

After the death of George II, the ownership rights of the Great Britain were transferred in the name of his grandson Frederick, who at the age of 22 was raised as King of Great Britain and Ireland, called George III. He was the third British monarch of German national, originally rulers of a Hânover estate in Germany. Unlike his two predecessors, George III was born in London and spoke English. It was a matter of pride for his subject population. George never returned back to his family estate in Germany. To appease his subjects, George, in his accession speech to Parliament proclaimed: "Born and educated in this kingdom, I glory in the name of Britain."^[354]

On September 8, 1761 the King married Princess Charlotte of Mecklenburg-Strelitz and both were crowned at Westminster Abbey. They had 15 children—nine sons and six daughters. George remarkably never took a mistress.

In 1765, a Stamp Duty and other taxes were imposed in the colonies of the British America. As a result, the American subjects rigorously protested, refused to pay taxes without representation, they even said that the Parliament of England had no right to levy taxes upon them. To counter the move, Parliament of England passed the Declaratory Act in 1766, stating the colonies were subordinate to Parliament and subject to British Law.

On December 16, 1773, a group of colonists destroyed ship load of tea at Boston Port owned by the British East India Company -

sole supplier of tea in the Americas. The act in Boston and Massachusetts came to be known as the Boston Tea Party. As a punishment, Boston Port was closed on June 1, 1774 by the British authorities until the East India Company had been repaid for the destroyed tea and until the king was satisfied that order had been restored.

To resist the British actions, the colonist organized the First Continental Congress in September 1774. Fighting broke out between the Colonists of the Thirteen British Colonies and the authorities representing King George III. On August 23, 1775 King George III speaks before both houses of the British Parliament to discuss growing concern about the rebellion in the North America, which he viewed as a traitorous action against himself and Great Britain. On October 26, 1775, King George III issued a Proclamation of Rebellion. He declared the American colonies in a state of "open and avowed rebellion" and ordained his officials in the British Colonies "to use their utmost authority to suppress the rebellion." In 1776, the King George dispatched an army of 32,000 men under Sir William Howe to bombard and destroy ports of colonists, sack and burn their towns.^[355] It was the largest force the British had ever sent outside of Europe at that time.

In retaliation, the Second Continental Congress meeting at Philadelphia, Pennsylvania announced that the Thirteen Colonies, then at war with the Kingdom of Great Britain regarded themselves as Thirteen Newly Independent Sovereign States and no longer are under British rule.

On July 4, 1776, the following thirteen British colonies declared independence from the Kingdom of Great Britain and established the United States of America as a "Confederation" of Sovereign States: (1) Virginia (2) South Carolina (3) New York (4) Rhode Island (5) Connecticut (6) Georgia (7) New Hampshire (8) Pennsylvania (9) Massachusetts (10) North Carolina (11) New Jersey (12) Delaware (13) Maryland. In the Declaration of

Independence they levied Thirty Charges against the British King George III:

“He (King George III) an unworthy head of a civilized nation has made war upon our people and our land. He has plundered our seas, ravaged our coasts, burnt our towns and destroyed the lives of our people. The history of the present King of Great Britain is a history of repeated injuries and usurpation... He is at this time transporting large armies of foreign mercenaries to complete the works of death, desolation and tyranny ... He has excited domestic insurrections amongst us, and has endeavored to bring on the inhabitants of our frontiers the merciless ‘Indian Savages’ whose known rule of warfare is an undistinguished destruction of all ages, sexes and conditions.”

But the British King George III was not prepared to recognize sovereignty of the new state. He kept on fighting to reconquer his Thirteen Colonies continuously for over seven years. At the time, Britain had the world's most powerful navy, a well-trained professional army; the Great Britain signed further treaties with various German states, which supplied about 30,000 mercenaries. By 1779, the number of British and German troops stationed in North America was over 60,000. The British recruited nearly 20,000 blacks at the end of the war. [356] Approximately 13,000 Native Americans fought on the British side, with the largest group coming from the powerful Iroquois Confederacy. Although the Confederacy remained neutral but its three states - the Seneca, Onondaga and Cayuga sided with the British. Members of the Mohawk fought on both sides. Many Tuscarora and Oneida sided with the colonists. In the war of colonists, the Iroquois Confederacy shattered lost its existance and land.

In early 1778, France (Britain's chief rival) signed a Treaty of Alliance with the United States and the conflict escalated. The

United States and France were soon joined by Spain and the Dutch Republic, while Britain had no major allies of its own.

In April 1782, the Parliament of Great Britain voted to end the war in America. Finally in 1783, Britain ended the war and recognized the sovereignty of the United States.[357][358]

It was a miracle that a newly established country with limited resources defeated the most despotic, cruel and powerful enslaver and human hunter of the world. It was for the first time in history that the United States of America was born as a 'country' instead of a 'kingdom' owned by its people instead of a king. The term 'subject' was transformed into 'people' who became the fount of power, justice, honor and all dignities and its rulers were made 'servants' of the people.

The successful establishment of the United States thoroughly proved that this world could be run without kings in a more progressive manner. It served as a great message for all the nations all over the world ruled by the kings at that time.

French were the first to respond. Within six years after the Great Britain recognized the sovereignty of the United States, the world witnessed one of the greatest revolt known as the French Revolution. On August 26, 1789, the Declaration of the rights of Man and of the Citizen was passed by National Constituent Assembly of France, which said that all "Men are born and remain free and equal in rights. Social distinctions may be founded only upon the general good.[359] They have certain natural rights to property, to liberty, and to life. Furthermore, government should be carried on by elected representatives.[360] The principle of all sovereignty resides essentially in the nation. No any individual or body may exercise any authority which does not proceed directly from the nation. No person shall be accused, arrested or imprisoned except in the cases and according to the forms prescribed by law... No one shall be disquieted on account of his opinions including his religious views ... The free communication of ideas and opinions is one of

the most precious of the rights of man. Every citizen may, accordingly, speak, write and print with freedom, but shall be responsible for such abuses of this freedom as shall be defined by law. Since property is an inviolable and sacred right, no one shall be deprived thereof except where public necessity." The 17 articles of the Declaration served as the preamble to the Constitution of 1791. It was a fundamental document in the history of human and civil rights protected equally by law. Subsequently France was transformed into a democratic and secular society.

On August 10, 1792, the King Louis XVI was arrested and placed on trial, convicted of high treason and crimes against the state and condemned to death. In September 1792, they abolished monarchy, proclaimed France a Republic. On January 21, 1793 the king was dragged to the guillotine and executed. Nine months later, the Queen Marie-Antoinette of France (1755-1793) suffered the same fate in January 1793 for treason and theft charges. The French Revolution created terror in all of the monarchs of Europe; they prepared to jeopardize the revolt exclusively with the assistance of the British monarchs.

Since the founders of the French revolution considered 'religion' - an obsolete doctrine inherited from the past and a threat to enlightenment, freedom, democratic views and against the basic principles of the French Revolution. They decided to replace gradually the Catholic Christianity - the official religion of France with modern ideas; replaced the Christian Calendar with a new Revolutionary Calendar started with the advent of the French Republic (Year 1). The new names of months with ten-day week eliminated Sunday as a day of rest and worship. They clearly informed that 'Christianity' had no place in the French Republic. On November 2, 1789, the new Constituent Assembly passed a decree that placed all Church property 'at the disposition of the nation'. By 1794, churches of France and religious orders were closed down and religious worship suppressed. On November 27, 1790 the Assembly decreed that

all clergy must take a public oath of loyalty to the Constitution of France or surrender their position. On April 13, 1791 the Pope issued his condemnation. On April 6, 1792 the Assembly banned all forms of religious dress and the priests were advised to abandon the priesthood and were encouraged – or in some cases forced – to marry. Any priest that continued to practice would face arrest and deportation.

To save the revolution, a Revolutionary Tribunal was established on March 10, 1793 to identify and punish the ‘enemies of liberty’ and ‘enemies of the people.’^[361] A large numbers of priests and nuns were arrested and placed on trial. Over 17,000 people were officially tried and executed –often by guillotine and an unknown number of others died in prison or without trial. Further 300,000 people languished in prison under a vague “law of suspects.”

In October 1793, public worship was forbidden and over the next few months all visible signs of Christianity were removed, Church bells were pulled down and melted, crosses were taken away from churches and cemeteries and statues, relics and works of art were seized. On November 23, 1793, churches were closed, to be converted into warehouses, manufacturing works or even stables. Streets and other public places bearing the names of saints were given new names. On June 8, 1794, Augustin Robespierre, one of the founding fathers of the French Revolution said, “from the beginning of time, the Supreme Being decreed for all the ages and for all peoples liberty, good faith and justice. He did not create kings to devour the human race. He did not create priests to harness us like vile animals ... He created the universe to proclaim His power. He created men to help each other, to love each other mutually, and to attain to happiness by the way of virtue.’ Robespierre opposed the power of the Catholic Church and the Pope. Subsequently there was a fierce war in between the Catholicism and the ideology of French Revolution. In the meantime, situation turned around due to Reign of Terror; as a result most of the founding fathers of

the French Revolution were killed including Robespierre who was guillotined on July 28, 1794 without trial.

On November 9, 1799 Napoleon Bonaparte (1769-1821) Army Commander betrayed the people of France as well as the spirit of the French Revolution, staged a coup d'état, occupied the French Republic and appointing himself as its First Consul. The event marked a great set back to the French Revolution.

On January 1, 1801, following Act of Union passed by the British Parliament in 1800, Ireland was forcibly united with Great Britain as a single kingdom, known as the "United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland". After the take over of Napoleon in France, King George dropped the title "king of France", which British monarchs had maintained since last five hundred years that began during the reign of Edward III (1327 - 1377).[362]

On May 18, 1804, Napoleon restored monarchy against the spirit of French Revolution, proclaimed him self emperor, and made his wife Josephine Empress. The coronation ceremony was held on December 2, 1804 at the Cathedral of Notre Dame in Paris. Pope Pius VII was present who handed Napoleon the crown that the 35-year-old usurper placed on his own head.[363] In 1804, King George suffered a second major bout of insanity. It was suggested that he had the blood disease porphyria the cause of his illness remains unknown.

On May 26, 1805, Napoleon crowned him self again, this time with the iron circlet that symbolized the rule over all of Italy. In 1811, George had become permanently insane and lived in seclusion at Windsor Castle.[364] He became completely blind and increasingly deaf and was incapable of knowing or understanding either he was a King. Under the situation, Prince of Wales (future George IV) eldest son of George III ruled as Prince Regent.

By 1807, following the traditional job of the kings and emperors, Napoleon invaded, conquered and enslaved most of the nations

of Europe, extended his empire from the River Elbe in the north, down through Italy in the south, and from the Pyrenees to the Dalmatian coast.

By 1814, Napoleon was decisively defeated by allied force, arrested and exiled him to the island of Elba. On April 5, 1814 the French Senate passed the following decree: Napoleon Bonaparte is cast down from the throne and the right of succession in his family is abolished.^[365] The French people and army are absolved from their oath of fidelity to him. Subsequently Napoleon was replaced by Louis XVIII (1755-1824) - former Bourbon rulers.

On February 26, 1815, after less than a year in exile, Napoleon escaped Elba and sailed to the French mainland with a group of more than 1,000 supporters. On March 20, he returned to Paris and raised a new Grand Army of 200,000 warriors. But Napoleon was defeated at Waterloo on June 18, 1815 by an allied force of Britain, Prussia Austria and Russia headed by the British Commander Arthur Wellesley, the Duke of Wellington. Napoleon was subsequently exiled to the island of Saint Helena, in the South Atlantic Ocean, where he died on May 5, 1821, at age 51, most likely of stomach cancer.

After the defeat of Napoleon Bonaparte, a Treaty of Paris was signed on November 20, 1815 by which the former Bourbon monarchy was restored and Catholicism henceforth was recognized only 'the religion of the vast majority of French citizens.' The defeated France was ordained to pay 700 million francs in indemnities in five yearly installments. France also had to pay further expenses of 150,000 Allied army occupants of France up to five years at a cost of 250 million francs a year. The borders of France were reduced to 1790 level.

After the Napoleonic Wars, Great Britain was the main beneficiary: France ceded the Ionian Islands, Malta, Mauritius, St Lucia and Tobago to Britain; Spain ceded Trinidad and the

Netherlands Guyana, and the Cape Colony. As a result, the Great Britain emerged as the world's greatest colonial power.

King George spent his last decade in a fog of insanity. In 1819, at Christmas George shouted for 58 hours causing him to foam at the mouth. He died blind, deaf and mad on January 29, 1820 at Windsor Castle, six days after the death of his fourth son, the Duke of Kent. He was buried on February 16, in St George's Chapel, Windsor Castle.^{[366][367][368]}

George III lived for 81 years and 239 days and reigned for 59 years and 96 days: both his life and his reign were longer than those of any of his predecessors. On George III's death, the Prince Regent succeeded his father as George IV.

George IV

1820 - 1830

When George III died in 1820, the Prince Regent, then aged 57, ascended the throne as George IV, with no real change in his powers. He became King of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland and of Hanover. In 1811 Prince George was made regent for his mentally ill father. The Regency lasted for a decade until his father's death in 1820.

At the age of 17, the Prince had an affair with an actress Mary Robinson. At the age of 21, the Prince secretly married a Roman Catholic Maria Fitzherbert, a commoner, six years elder and twice widowed. They had at least two illegitimate children. The marriage was against the Act of Settlement 1701, which barred the spouse of a Catholic from succeeding to the throne, and the Royal Marriages Act 1772, which prohibited his marriage without the consent of the King. Legally the union was void, as the King's consent was not granted (and never even requested).

The Prince was plunged into debt by his exorbitant lifestyle.^[369] His father George III refused to aid him unless he married his cousin Princess Caroline of Brunswick. In 1787, the Parliament, meanwhile, granted the Prince £161,000 (equivalent to £18,450,000 today) to pay his debts and £60,000 (equivalent to £6,876,000 today) for improvements to Carlton House. It was the period when Britain was at war with France under Napoleon Bonaparte.

The Prince of Wales's debts continued to climb, finally in exchange for parliament paying his debts, the Prince agreed to marry his cousin Princess Caroline of Brunswick. They were married on April 8, 1795 at the Chapel Royal, St James's Palace. The marriage, however, was disastrous and the couple soon

separated after the birth of their only child, Princess Charlotte, in 1796. Caroline went to live abroad, inviting scandal by taking lovers and running up vast debts. And the Prince remained with Maria Fitzherbert for the rest of his life.

In 1804, the Prince accused his wife Caroline of having an illegitimate son William Austin out of her involvement with a man called Bartolomeo Pergami.^[370] Caroline was put on trial by the House of Lords demanding that Caroline to appear before them. However, a Parliamentary Commission of Enquiry could not prove any thing against her. In 1814 Caroline left England and proceeded to shock the people of Europe. She danced at a ball in Geneva naked to the waist, and in Naples she became the mistress of King Joachim, Napoleon's brother-in-law.

In 1820, when the Price became King George IV, Caroline promptly returned from the continent, but George IV refused to recognize Caroline as Queen. She was not even allowed to attend the coronation ceremony held at Westminster Abbey on July 19, 1821. Caroline was shocked immediately fell ill and died within 19 days on August 7; during her illness she often stated that she thought she had been poisoned.

George had many mistresses included Mary Perdita Robinson, an actress, Grace Elliott, the divorced wife of a physician; Frances Villiers, Countess of Jersey and others. In later life, his mistresses were the Isabella, Marchioness of Hertford and the Lady Marchioness Conyngham, who were both wives of aristocrats.

George was rumored to have fathered several illegitimate children. James Ord (born 1786) who moved to the United States and became a Jesuit priest—was reportedly his son by Fitzherbert. Captain Henry A F. Hervey (1786-1824) a naval officer in the West Indies was one more of his illegitimate sons by the songwriter Lady Anne Lindsay (later Barnard), a daughter of the 5th Earl of Balcarres. Other reported offspring

include Major George Seymour Crole, the son of theatre manager's daughter Eliza Crole or Fox; William Hampshire, the son of publican's daughter Sarah Brown.

By December 1828, like his father, he was almost completely blind from cataracts and was suffering from such severe gout in his right hand and arm that he could no longer sign documents.

In 1829 George was forced by his ministers, much against his will, to agree to Catholic Emancipation. In 1830 his weight was recorded to be 20 stone (130 kg; 280 lb). Towards the end of his life George became mentally unstable. He died of a heart attack, aged 67 years at Windsor Castle in 1830. He was buried in St George's Chapel, Windsor Castle, on July 15, 1830.^[37] Upon George's death in 1830, the throne passed to one of his younger brothers, William IV.

William IV

1830 - 1837

At the age of 64, William IV inherited the throne of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland and of Hanover, Germany on June 26, 1830. He was the third son of George III and younger brother of George IV.

From 1790 until 1811, William lived with his mistress, the actress Dorothy Jordan. They had 10 children who took the surname Fitzclarence. Upon taking the throne, William did not forget his nine surviving illegitimate children creating his eldest son Earl of Munster and the others were similarly raised to different status. Before he met Mrs. Jordan, William had an illegitimate son whose mother is unknown; the son, also called William, drowned off Madagascar in February 1807.

On July 11, 1818 William married German Princess Adelaide of Saxe-Meiningen, daughter of George I, Duke of Saxe-Meiningen, at an age of 25, equal to the half age of William. Their marriage lasted for almost twenty years until William's death. The Princess after several miscarriages had two daughters who died as infants. William IV was the last monarch to appoint a prime minister contrary to the will of Parliament.

William died on June 20, 1837 aged 71 of heart failure at Windsor Castle, where he was buried.^[372] He had no legitimate children and was succeeded by his niece Victoria.

Queen Victoria

1837 - 1901

After the death of William IV, 18-year-old Victoria was crowned in Westminster Abbey as Queen of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland on June 28, 1837.^[373] Some 400,000 visitors flocked to the city of London to witness the event. She was the daughter of Prince Edward, the fourth son of King George III. On May 1, 1876 she was also proclaimed as Empress of India.

In 1840, Victoria married her first German cousin, Prince Albert of Saxe-Coburg and Gotha and the union produced nine children who were married into the so-called royal and noble families across the continent, thereby Queen Victoria acquired the title "the grandmother of Europe".

Her reign of 63 years and seven months is known as the Victorian Era. It was an era of conquest, expansion, smuggling, drug trafficking, massacres and murders. She became the most powerful woman on earth, as a quarter of the Earth's total land area and one-fifth of the world's populations were under her control. The phrase "British empire on which the sun never sets" was often used to her reign describing the expanse of the conquered area of the globe. She ruled most of the Indian subcontinent, Canada, Australia, New Zealand, large parts of the South Pacific, Africa including Egypt, South Africa and many other large territories.

It was the Victorian Era, when the Emperor of India Bahadur Shah Zafar was arrested on September 21, 1857 and two of his two sons and a grandson were shot dead by the employees of the British East India Company. This was the period when all of India was in revolt against the rule of the East India Company. Hundreds and thousands of the Indian soldiers liberated almost

all of India during 1857. In Lucknow, the British Commissioner Sir Henry Lawrence was killed together with the 350 British soldiers and 1200 loyal Indian Sepoys. In Indore (Madhya Pradesh) 39 Europeans were killed while escaping from the city. In Jhelum (Punjab) 35 British company's soldiers were killed on July 7, 1857. In Delhi 52 British officers and civilians were killed. In Kanpur, a group of 200 British officers and soldiers were massacred. Most of the British Company officers escaped along with their families. By the end of June 1857, the Company had lost control of much of India.

In the meantime, the British Company managed some troops from Punjab loyal to the British Company, including Sikhs and Pashtuns of the North-West Frontier Province. They were joined by other Indian soldiers, from the Madras and Bombay army. Troops were also brought from Burma (Rangoon) and Ceylon (Sri Lanka). Services of Gorkha units were hired on contract from the king of Nepal. Even the British troops stationed in China were called together with those troops who were part of the Crimean War. Subsequently, the British Company reconquered India. For the rebel soldiers, orders were issued to execute all of them. Thousands were lined up and shot dead, thousands were blown through cannons into pieces; thousands were hanged on trees. Those civilians perceived to be sympathetic to the revoltees were arrested and hanged without any trial. However, to recover all of India, the British Company had to kill over one million Indians. One could find, in major parts of India, bodies of male, female and children, who were hanged on trees on all the road sides. Under these circumstances, the Moghul Emperor of India Bahadur Shah Zafar, aged 82 was deported to Rangoon (now Yangon, Myanmar) where he died in exile on November 7, 1862 at the age of 87,^{[374][375]} bringing the Moghul Empire to its end after about 300 years rule.

On January 1876, Lord Lytton, Viceroy of India (1876 and 1880) convened a *darbar* (imperial assembly) in Delhi which marked the Proclamation of Queen Victoria as Empress of India. The

ceremony was attended by about 84,000 people including princes and title holders.

It was the Victorian Era, when the British authorities in India adopted policies to cripple and maim the Indian population through series of famines. They forcibly changed agriculture patterns in India, instead of rice and wheat, opium had to be cultivated on large scale, thereby creating food shortages resulting in famines. They also kept on looting the treasury of India and shifting it to England, raised the taxes in India from 15% to 33% on gross produce collected through brutal methods. Farmers were beaten and their stocks were confiscated. As a result, one after another crops were failed and the economy and agriculture of India collapsed. In Bihar, Orissa and Ganjam districts of Madras over one million Indians died of starvation during 1860-61.^[376] Again after a gap of five years, in 1865-66 five million more Indians died of starvation in Orissa, Bihar, Bareilly and Madras. The Orissa famine affected the east coast of India from Madras upwards, an area covering 180,000 miles. In Orissa alone, at least one million people died. Again in 1869 during the Victorian Era, the people of Rajputana were trapped in famine known as the Great Rajputana Famine. It spread over an area of 296,000 square miles affecting Gujarat, the North Deccan districts, the Jubalpure division of the Central Provinces, Berar, the Agra and Bundelkhand divisions of the United Provinces, as well as the Hissar division of the Punjab. In this famine around 1.5 million Indians died of hunger.

Again during the reign of Queen Victoria in between 1876-78, a Great Famine was created by the British authorities, which severely affected the Southern India, Madras, Mysore, Hyderabad and Bombay for two years. In 1878, famine spread north to some regions of the Central Provinces and the United Provinces together with the areas of Punjab. The famine ultimately affected a large area spreading 257,000 square miles (670,000 km) and caused distress to a population of over 58.5 million. The overall mortality in the famine was very high; over

ten million people were starved to death with a portion of related epidemics. Lord Lytton, British Viceroy, mentally a terrorist - an appointee of the Queen Victoria in India (1876 - 78) totally refused to provide any assistance during the famine; even he discouraged his officials to help the famine-hit people. He issued ordered to his officials saying, "There is to be no interference of any kind on the part of the Queen Government with the object of reducing the price of food," and instructing district officers to "discourage relief works in every possible way." The results of such actions proved fatal. Lytton is blamed for the severity of the famine due to his cruel policy. The Famine Commission of 1880 in its findings said that each province in British India, including Burma had a surplus of food grains and the annual surplus was 5.16 million tons.[377]

Again after a gap of four years, during the Victorian Era, the people of Delhi, Western Awdh, Eastern Punjab, Rajputana and Kashmir were hit by a very severe famine during 1782-84, known as Chalisa Famine. Simultaneously, South India was also hit by the famine, especially the city of Madras and its surroundings. In both the famines, large areas were depopulated as about eleven million people died of starvation.

During 1896-97, when Queen Victoria shamelessly was celebrating her Diamond Jubilee, the people of Central India, Madras, Bombay, Deccan, Bengal, Berar, Bihar, parts of the Madras and Rajputana were dying of starvation. The famine had affected an area of 307,000 square miles (800,000 km) in which around five million Indians were starved to death. At the time, in London, thousands of guests, so-called prince and princes were enjoying the golden Jubilee celebrations. A six mile long procession was also taken out by the troops arriving from all over the empire.

Again during 1899-1900, the people of Bombay Presidency, Central Provinces, Berar, Ajmer, Kathiawar, Hyderabad, Madras and the North-Western Provinces were trapped in a severe

famine, in which around one million Indians were starved to death. In Bombay British Presidency 462,000 and in Deccan 166,000 people lost their lives. The cattle perished in millions. During the reign of Queen Victoria, the life expectancy in India was drastically reduced to a horrible stage between 22 years and 23 years.[378]

It was the Victorian Era, when the Queen Victoria emerged as the greatest smuggler and drug trafficker. She did this dirty job through the British East India Company. Opium was smuggled to China on a large scale, creating immense health problems for the Chinese people and its army. The opium addicted Chinese army lost its strength to fight against any aggression.

The Qing emperor of China tried to halt the illegal activities of the British Company, wrote a letter in this regard to the Queen Victoria – guardian of the smugglers, she never cared even to reply the letter received from the emperor of China. As a last resort, the Chinese authorities arrested 1,700 opium dealers and destroyed 2.6 million pounds of opium smuggled to China by the British Company. In retaliation, the British East India Company invaded China twice, assisted by the British Empire under Queen Victoria. The British company also hired the services of the French and other European mercenaries. In both the wars, known as the Opium Wars, fought in between 1839 to 1842 and 1856 to 1860, the British Company decisively defeated half a million forces of China. At the end, the British Company devastated the capital city Beijing, looted and burned the Summer Palaces of the Qing emperors. As a result the Qing emperor Xianfeng (1850 to 1861) fled to the northern palace in Jehol province, leaving behind his brother, Prince Gong to negotiate and settle with the invading smugglers. Subsequently the Qing emperor of China legalized the sale of opium, surrendered 15 major ports of China to Britain along with Hong Kong and Kowloon in indemnity, paid three million ounces of silver and paid further two million to the French mercenaries. The British Company was allowed to convert freely the Chinese

people to Christianity. Subsequently thousands of Protestant and Anglicanist missionaries arrived in China, converted tens of thousands of Chinese to Christianity. They were exempted from Chinese laws, granted full civil rights, including the right to reside within China and own property.

However the Chinese emperor completely surrendered before the British East India Company who had a working plan to conquer all of China in a similar way they applied in India. Such a situation created serious resentment in the Chinese people. They initially revolted against the sale of opium and conversion of the Chinese people to Christianity. The move resulted in a bloodiest civil wars in human history starting in the provinces of Jiangsu, Zhejiang, Anhui, Jiangxi and Hubei that lasted for over 14 years from 1850 to 1864, known as the Taiping Rebellion. It was also one of the largest conflicts of the nineteenth century with estimates of war dead ranging between 20 to 70 million.[379]

The Taiping Rebellion was followed by the "Boxer Rebellion" (1899 - 1901) when millions of Chinese revolted to stop the forced sale of opium and conversion of the Chinese people to Christianity. The revoltees started burning the Christian churches and cathedrals newly built in China; they also started killing the convert Chinese Christians on large scale. To save the lives of the Christian converts and others, around 55,000 troops of the Eight-Nation Alliance invaded China under the British command headed by General Alfred Gaselee, who defeated the Chinese army and captured Beijing on August 14, 1900. After the capture, the forces of the Eight-Nation Alliance started looting, killing and raping the Chinese women; as a result thousands of Chinese women committed suicide. Most of the Chinese women were bayoneted after rape.

Just few hours before the capture of Beijing, the emperor Dowager Empress and several members of the royal family fled Beijing. Finally the Eight-Nation Alliance agreed to vacate the capital city of China against 450 million *taels* of fine silver as

indemnity equivalent to US\$ 61 billion (in 2010 on a purchasing power parity basis) payable in thirty-nine years. At the command of the Alliance, the Qing emperor executed ten, the most sincere high-ranking officials, including the Manchu Governor Yuxian. These officials played a heroic role by failing all attempts of the British East India Company to occupy China and elevate Queen Victoria as Empress of China, as they did in India. After the departure of the Eight-Nation Alliance, the Qing Empire collapsed four decades after the collapse of the Moghul Empire in India. It was the Victorian era, when it was decided for the genocide of the Catholic population of Ireland by way of 'famine' in a similar method applied in India. Subsequently, in between 1845 and 1852 one-third Irish population died of Great Famine and one third populations emigrated from Ireland to other parts of the world to save their lives, causing the island's population to fall by about 25%. Irish were the people who bluntly refused to relinquish their Catholic faith in favor of Anglicanism - [380][381][382][383][384] a new faith in Christianity designed by King Henry VIII for his personal motives.

The 'famine' was created by exporting all food stocks and other commodities from Ireland to England through thousands of shipments. By 1846, millions of human beings in Ireland had nothing to eat. To conceal the crime, the British authorities appealed for international aid for the Irish people. Queen Victoria herself donated £2,000, who was the Queen of Great Britain - ruler of the richest, most powerful and largest empire the world had ever seen, upon which the sun never set. For the requirement of justice, from Henry VIII to the Queen Victoria, lying comfortably in the expensive and luxurious tombs, they must be prosecuted and punished for their genocide of the Irish and the Indian nations, in a similar form of punishment applied on Charles I, Oliver Cromwell, Queen Mary of Scots, Queen Catherine Howard and Anne Boleyn - future Queen of England.

Edward VII

1901 - 1910

After the death of Queen Victoria on January 22, 1901 at an age of 81, her eldest son Edward VII was made King of the United Kingdom and the British Dominions and Emperor of India from January 22, 1901 until his death in 1910.

Edward was related to nearly every other European monarch and came to be known as the "uncle of Europe". The German Kaiser Wilhelm II was his nephew, Tsar Nicholas II of Russia was his nephew, King Haakon of Norway was his son-in-law, King George I of Greece and Frederick VIII of Denmark were his brothers-in-law, King Albert I of Belgium, King Ferdinand of Bulgaria and King Manuel II of Portugal his cousins, Queen Victoria Eugenia of Spain, Crown Princess Margaret of Sweden, Crown Princess Marie of Romania, Crown Princess Sophia of Greece and Empress Alexandra of Russia were his nieces.

Edward at the age of 21 was married to Alexandra of Denmark aged 18, at St George's Chapel on March 10, 1863 and had six children, five of whom survived to adulthood.^[385] Edward also had a series of mistresses whom his wife Alexandra simply tolerated.

Edward spent much of his time on the London social scene known as a playboy, interested in other men's wives, horse racing, shooting, eating, drinking and gambling. He never acknowledged any illegitimate children.

Edward socialized with actress Lillie Langtry, Lady Randolph Churchill (born Jennie Jerome, she was the mother of Winston Churchill), Daisy Greville, Countess of Warwick, actress Sarah Bernhardt, actress Nellie Clifton, Lady Susan Vane-Tempest,

singer Hortense Schneider; prostitute Giulia Beneni (known as La Barucci), wealthy Agnes Keyser and Alice Keppel (great-grandmother of Camilla wife of Charles the current Prince of Wales), and many others. At least fifty-five liaisons are assumed.

In the 1880s, Edward was a regular visitor of Parisian brothels, most notably Le Chabanaïs, which was regarded as the top establishment in Paris where brothels were legal.

Edward habitually smoked twenty cigarettes and twelve cigars a day.^[386] Towards the end of his life he increasingly suffered from bronchitis. He suffered a momentary loss of consciousness during a state visit to Berlin in February 1909. On 27 April he returned to Buckingham Palace, still suffering from severe bronchitis. Alexandra returned from visiting her brother, King George I of Greece, in Corfu a week later on 5 May. On May 10, Edward suffered a series of heart attacks and died. He was buried at Windsor Castle on May 20, 1910. Edward was succeeded by his second son, George V.

George V

1910 - 1936

George V succeeded his father Edward VII and became King of the United Kingdom and the British Dominions, and Emperor of India, from May 6, 1910 until his death in 1936.

In 1893, Prince George was married to his German cousin (and his late brother's fiancée), Princess Victoria Mary of Teck. Their union produced five sons and a daughter. Their youngest son, Prince John died after having a seizure when he was 13.

Four years after George's succession, World War I broke out. At the time, most of European monarchs were related to King George V.^[387] It was a Family Festival of the European monarchs – mostly human hunters, invaders and conquerors of the major parts of the world. German Emperor Wilhelm II, main culprit of the World War I was a first cousin of King George V and related to many monarchs and princes of Europe. He was also related to Queens Marie of Romania, Maud of Norway, Victoria Eugenie of Spain and of the Empress Alexandra of Russia. In 1889, Wilhelm's younger sister, Sophia, married the future King Constantine I of Greece. When Queen Victoria of the British Empire was dying at Osborne House in January 1901, Wilhelm traveled to England and was at her bedside. He also was present at the funeral of King Edward VII (his uncle) in 1910. In 1913, Wilhelm hosted a lavish wedding in Berlin for his only daughter, Victoria Louise. Among the guests at the wedding were Tsar Nicholas II of Russia and his cousin King George V and the Queen Mary.

At the assassination of Archduke Franz Ferdinand of Austria, heir to the throne of Austria-Hungary on June 28, 1914, the

monarchs of Europe were terrified and shocked to such an extent that they lost senses and became mad and in terror and fear of their lives began the World War I within one month on July 28, 1914 that lasted until November 11, 1918 in which more than 9 million armedmen and 7 million civilians died. After the war, about 50 million people are estimated to have died from the outbreak of influenza worldwide.

The war was fought in between the British Empire, France and the Russian Empire versus the Germany, Austria-Hungary and Italy. Later, the United States, Japan, the Ottoman Empire, Romania and Bulgaria jumped into the Family Festival of the European monarchs.

The British monarchs were the main players of the World War I. They mobalized 8.7 million men, recruited mostly working class from her subject population of England, Scotland, Ireland, Australia, Tasmania, Canada, New Zealand, South Africa, Newfoundland, West Indies and India. According to figures produced in the 1920's by the Central Statistical Office: Total British subjects killed in action roughly one million (956,703) missing presumed dead 39,527. Half of the dead (187,861) were buried but could not be identified by name and 338,955 not buried at all. Total wounded British soldiers 2.27 million; 250,000 British soldiers suffered a partial or full amputation. Raymond, son the British Prime Minister Herbert Asquith (1908 - 1916) was killed, while future Prime Minister Andrew Bonar Law (1922 - 1923) lost two. During the war more than 200 generals were killed, wounded or captured.

The British monarchs made one million lives as fodder of war in the First World War, in return they gained control of Palestine, Transjordan, Iraq, Egypt, parts of Cameroon and Togo, Tanganyika, New Guinea and Samoa, as well as 13 million new subjects and 1,800,000 square miles land (4,700,000 km²). On November 11, 1918 a large crowds gathered in London's

Trafalgar Square to celebrate the victories in the First World War.

In between 1918 - 1940, the British monarchs emerged as the greatest 'enslaver' in human history as they controlled over 25% of the world's population at that time and more than a quarter of the land area of the globe. The Empire facilitated the spread of English language and Anglican faith around much of the globe. During the First World War, four major empires of the world completely collapsed: the German Empire, Tsar Russian Empire, Austro-Hungarian Empire and the Ottoman Empire. Its emperors escaped leaving behind 9 million dead bodies of the soldiers, 6 million bodies of the civilians, some 2.7 million disabled veterans and 1,192,000 war orphans plus 533,000 widows.

On June 28, 1919 following the Treaty of Versailles, Germany was ordained to accept responsibility for starting the World War and pay 132 billion marks (\$31.5 billion, 6.6 billion pounds) in reparations. The treaty drastically reduced the German military strength to 100,000 and the country was prevented from possessing major military armaments such as tanks, warships and submarines.

Until the signing of the Treaty of Versailles on June 28, 1919, the winning forces maintained the naval blockade of Germany that had begun during the war.^[388] As Germany was dependent on food imports, it is estimated that 523,000 civilians died of starvation. It is further claimed that a quarter of a million more died from disease or starvation in the eight-month period following the end of the conflict. Once Germany was devastated, its emperor Wilhelm II fled to exile in the Netherlands. Upon the conclusion of the Treaty of Versailles in early 1919, Article 227 expressly provided for the prosecution of Wilhelm "for a supreme offence against international morality and the sanctity of treaties", but Queen Wilhelmina of the Netherlands refused to extradite him, despite appeals from the winners of war. King

George V wrote that he looked on his cousin Wilhelm as "the greatest criminal in history" but opposed the proposal to "hang the Kaiser".^[389] President Woodrow Wilson of the United States also rejected the idea by arguing that punishing Wilhelm for waging war would destabilize international order. At the other side, Wilhelm wrote a letter in 1940 to his sister Princess Margaret, "The hand of God is creating a new world and working miracles... We are becoming the United States of Europe under German leadership, a united European Continent."^[390]

During the World War I, the Tsar Nicholas II of Russia, first cousin of King George V (their mothers were sisters), was overthrown in the Russian Revolution of 1917.^[391] The Russian government requested the King George for rescue and assylum of the Russian imperial family but he refused. George was of the opinion that by offering political asylum to the Tsar and his family, the Russian revolution might incite a similar revolution in his kinhdom. In the meantime, Tsar Nicholas, his wife Alexandra and their children were shot dead by the Bolsheviks through firing squad in 1918. The following year, Nicholas's mother (George's aunt) Maria Feodorovna (Dagmar of Denmark) and other members of the extended Russian imperial family were rescued from the Crimea by British ships.

In March 1919, former Emperor Charles I of Austria and his family were also rescued and shifted to Switzerland. In 1922, a British Royal Navy ship was sent to Greece to rescue his cousins, including 1 year old Prince Philip now the Duke of Edinburgh.

In 1917, George - German by blood, changed the name of the British royal house from the German Saxe-Coburg-Gotha to Windsor. Queen Alexandra removed the Garter flags of his German relations from St George's Chapel, Windsor Castle. All the George's relatives in Britain relinquished their German titles and styles and adopted British-sounding surnames.

During the World War I, George's relatives were fighting on the German side,^[392] such as Prince Ernst August of Hanover, 3rd Duke of Cumberland and Teviotdale (the senior male-line great-grandson of George III) and Prince Carl Eduard, Duke of Albany and reigning Duke of Saxe-Coburg and Gotha (a male-line grandson of Queen Victoria), had their British peerages suspended by a 1919 Order in Council under the provisions of the Titles Deprivation Act 1917.

After the end of World War I, the British Empire expanded to its greatest extent. Movements for independence in India, Canada, New Zealand, Australia, Nigeria and South Africa were crushed.

In Ireland, during the World War I, the movement for the home rule led to the outbreak of the Irish War of Independence in 1919. On August 9, 1920, Martial law was imposed in Ireland and military courts were empowered to use the death penalty and captivity without trial. Finally the movement resulted in the creation of the Irish Free State by the end of 1922. But Ireland was mischievously partitioned; its six counties became Northern Ireland ruled by the British monarchs.

In 1935, the king celebrated his Silver Jubilee, an occasion of great public rejoicing. Following year, George V died of a bronchial illness on January 20, 1936 and was buried at St. George's Chapel.^[393] George was succeeded by his son Edward VIII.

Edward VIII

January 20, 1936 – December 11, 1936

Edward VIII inherited the crown and became king of the Great Britain and the Dominions of the British Empire, elevated as Emperor of India on January 20, 1936 until his abdication on December 11, the same year. Edward was the eldest son of King George V and Queen Mary.

In 1917, during the First World War, Prince Edward began a love affair with Parisian courtesan Marguerite Alibert.^[349] Later in 1918 he broke off the affair to begin with another married woman, Freda Dudley Ward, a textile heiress. His father King George V was worried for his affairs with married women.

After becoming a king, Edward was involved in a deep love affair with Wallis Simpson, an American woman who had divorced her first husband and was seeking a divorce from her second. When Edward proposed to marry Simpson, the issue led to a great crisis in the so-called royal British family, already specialists in such love affairs, homosexuality and producing large number of illegitimate children. They never cared for moral ethics or religious bindings. However, the royal family rigorously opposed the idea for a king to marry a commoner and to raise her as queen consort, whose two living ex-husbands were still alive. Being the titular head of the Church of England, the marriage after divorce was unacceptable.

Finally Edward informed the royal family that he would abdicate if he could not marry Simpson. Edward duly signed the instruments of abdication on December 10, 1936 in the presence of his younger brother Prince Albert, Duke of York, next in line for the throne.

On the night of December 11, 1936, Edward explained his decision to abdicate in a worldwide radio broadcast. He famously said, "I have found it impossible to carry the heavy burden of responsibility and to discharge my duties as king as I would wish to do without the help and support of the woman I love." Edward departed Britain for Austria the following day; he was unable to join Simpson until her divorce became absolute, several months later. His brother, Prince Albert, Duke of York, succeeded to the throne as George VI. Edward, with a reign of 326 days was one of the shortest-reigning monarchs in British history.

After his abdication, Edward was created Duke of Windsor. He married Simpson in France on June 3, 1937 after her second divorce became final. In October 1937, the Duke and Duchess visited Germany and met Adolf Hitler. The visit was much publicized by the German media. During the visit Edward gave full Nazi salutes. Many historians have suggested that Hitler was prepared to reinstate Edward as king of Britain. In December 1940, Edward gave an interview to *Liberty* magazine that was published on March 22, 1941 and in it the Edward was reported to have said that "Hitler was the right and logical leader of the German people"^[395] later Edward protested that he had been misquoted and misinterpreted.

After receiving such reports, Edward was threatened with a court-martial from the concerned corners in Britain that if he did not return to British soil. Finally to keep him away from the European continent, Edward was appointed Governor of the Bahamas in July 1940, which he did not enjoy and referred to the islands as "a third-class British colony". In his memoirs, Edward admitted that he admired the Germans, but he denied being pro-Nazi. Of Hitler he wrote: "[the] Fuhrer struck me as a somewhat ridiculous figure, with his theatrical posturing and his bombastic pretensions."^[396]

At the end of the World War II, the couple returned to France and spent the remainder of their lives essentially in retirement. The City of Paris provided Edward a house for a nominal rent and the French government exempted him from paying income tax. In June 1953, instead of attending the coronation of Queen Elizabeth II in London, the Duke and Duchess watched the ceremony on television in Paris. He authored few books (*A King's Story* in 1951 and *Crown and the People, 1902-1953*) and some articles for the *Sunday Express*.

In late 1971, Edward was diagnosed with throat cancer and underwent cobalt therapy. On May 28, 1972 he died at his home in Paris,^[397] less than a month before his 78th birthday. His body was returned to Britain and buried within the grounds of Windsor Castle. Simpson died 14 years later and was buried alongside her husband as "Wallis, Duchess of Windsor".^[398]

George VI

1936 - 1952

Following the abdication of his elder brother, Edward VIII, George was proclaimed king on December 11, 1936 and crowned in May the following year. He was married to Lady Elizabeth Bowes-Lyon on April 26, 1923 and they had two daughters, Elizabeth and Margaret.

After less than three years of his reign, the World War II started and the British monarchs again prepared to play a leading dirty role in the war so as to gain more territories and to enslave more nations. The World War II lasted from 1939 to 1945 and it was the deadliest conflict in human history resulting estimated deaths of 60 million to 85 million soldiers and the civilians including deaths in captivity of about 5 million prisoners of war.^{[399][400][401]} Europe emerged as a continent of widows and orphans. Rape was a huge problem all across Europe. The warring soldiers committed rapes on large scale in Romania, Hungary, Czechoslovakia, Yugoslavia, Norway, Britain, France and Germany. Around 1.9 million German women altogether were raped. According to Time magazine of September 17, 1945, the US government provided its soldiers with an estimated 50 million condoms per month. However, the illegitimate children became a major issue. In Norway, for example, these children were not even considered Norwegian citizens. In France alone there were about 85,000 illegitimate children of German soldiers.

In the World War II, over 2.5 million soldiers and volunteer were hired from India to fight under British command in Germany, Italy, North African deserts, in the West African campaign and in the South Asian region. They were also sent to Burma to resist the Japanese. In the aftermath of war over 87,000 Indian soldiers

died in World War II. This was the period, when the British India was trapped in a devastating famine of 1943 created by the British authorities. They exported around 70,000 tonnes of rice from the famine hit areas to the war zones during January and July 1943. As a result approximately 3 million people died in West Bengal, Odisha, Bihar and the modern Bangladesh.

Winston Churchill, the then British prime minister was requested by the British authorities in India to stop export of food stocks from the famine areas, but he refused. Churchill was of the opinion that the starvation in India is less important than the supplies to war zones. While commenting on deaths in millions in India, Churchill asked, "Then why hasn't Gandhi died yet?" He further said, "I hate Indians, they are a beastly people with a beastly religion. The famine was their own fault for breeding like rabbits." However, it was a miracle, when King George VI unexpectedly acknowledged his faith in fundamental human rights. While addressing the first assembly of the United Nations held in London during January 1946, he proclaimed "our faith in the equal rights of men and women and of nations great and small". He was the first monarch in British history who decided to relieve all the nations enslaved by the British monarchs. Subsequently in 1947, George himself relinquished the title of Emperor of India, divided the empire – British India into two parts as independent countries known as India and Pakistan. Similarly Burma was relieved in January 1948; Palestine was divided between Israel and the Arab states in May 1948 and Ireland was also divided and allowed to raise as a republic in 1949.

On the morning of February 6, 1952, George VI was found dead, in bed at Sandringham House in Norfolk. He had died from a coronary thrombosis at the age of 56. His funeral took place at St. George's Chapel on February 15. His daughter Elizabeth, then on tour in Kenya flew back to London took the throne, becoming Queen Elizabeth II at the age of 25.

Elizabeth II

1952

After the death of her father King George VI, Elizabeth II became Queen of the following 64 countries and dependencies of the world: (1) England (2) Scotland (3) Wales (4) North Ireland (5) Australia (6) New Zealand (7) Canada (8) Jamaica (9) Barbados (10) Bahamas (11) Grenada (12) Saint Lucia (13) Jersey (14) Saint Helena (15) Isle of Man (16) Saint Vincent and the Grenadines (17) Belize (18) Antigua and Barbuda (19) Saint Kitts and Nevis (20) South Georgia and the South Sandwich Islands (21) Falkland Islands (22) Anguilla (23) British Virgin Islands (24) Cayman Islands (25) Montserrat (26) Bermuda (27) Turks and Caicos Islands (28) Solomon Islands (29) Tuvalu (30) Papua New Guinea (31) Nigeria (32) Cyprus (33) Kuwait (34) Sierra Leone (35) Tanzania (36) Trinidad and Tobago (37) Uganda (38) Kenya (39) Malawi (40) Malta (41) Zambia (42) The Gambia (43) Maldives (44) Guyana (45) Botswana (46) Lesotho (47) Yemen (48) Nauru (49) Mauritius (50) Swaziland (51) Tonga (52) Fiji (53) Sudan (54) Ghana (55) Malaysia (56) Bahrain (57) Qatar (58) United Arab Emirates (59) Seychelles (60) Dominica (61) Kiribati (62) Zimbabwe (63) Vanuatu and (64) Brunei.

In 1066, William the Bastard, the great grandfather of Elizabeth II conquered England, later his descendants down to George V kept on enslaving the humanity for over a thousand years. By virtue of conquest – the most heinous crime, Elizabeth II had become beneficiary and inherited rulership of sixty-four countries and dependencies occupied by her forefathers. She also had become Head of the Church of England. The Queen Elizabeth II is deemed the "Fount of Justice, the Fount of Honour and the source of all Dignities. The Queen is above the law holds that she "can do no wrong"^{[402][403]} (probably fallen from the Heaven) and the Queen cannot be prosecuted for criminal

offences. She is also free from civil action. She appears on postage stamps, coins and banknotes.

Following the verdict of his great father George VI, Queen Elizabeth liberated in phases the following 34 enslaved countries: Nigeria and Cyprus in 1960, Kuwait, Sierra Leone and Tanzania in 1961, Trinidad and Tobago and Uganda in 1962, Kenya in 1963, Malawi, Malta and Zambia in 1964, The Gambia and Maldives in 1965, Guyana, Botswana and Lesotho in 1966, Yemen in 1967, Nauru and Mauritius in 1968, Swaziland in 1968, Tonga and Fiji in 1970, Sudan in 1956, Ghana and Malaysia in 1957, Bahrain, Qatar and United Arab Emirates in 1971, Seychelles in 1976, Dominica in 1978, Kiribati in 1979, Zimbabwe and Vanuatu in 1980 and Brunei in 1984.

To liberate rest of the thirty countries, Queen Elizabeth is not prepared to pursue any graceful and honorable mode rather she is following the foot steps of the former emperors of the former German Empire, Tsar Russia and the Ottoman Empire. Instead of liberating the people of Australia, Scotland, Quebec (Canada), Tuvalu, Saint Vincent and the Grenadines, Queen Elizabeth engineered Referendums that were held on different occasions with two simple questions, whether they wanted to remain as independent country or not. All such referendums were sabotaged by the Governor Generals - personal appointees of the Queen, in collusion with the monarchist groups and others. The people of Australia, Scotland and Quebec were betrayed twice in the name of voting for independence. As a result, Elizabeth II, descendant of the most hardened criminals in the history continued to remain Queen of these enslaved nations. In Quebec, when the agents of the Queen Elizabeth found negative results, they viciously referred the issue of independence to the Supreme Court of Canada, which gave verdict that the unilateral secession contemplated in the referendum was illegal. Queen Elizabeth is playing with the lives and sentiments of the enslaved nations; instead of independence, she delays the issue for a longer period. Elizabeth II, herself was not raised to the status of Queen

through any referendum. She is queen of these countries simply by virtue of conquest.

Queen Elizabeth II has inherited enormous looted wealth, properties and the 30 enslaved countries. To defend her properties and conquered territories, the British Queen Elizabeth has arranged for a variety of weapons of mass destruction, including nuclear, biological and chemical weapons. As per the latest data, she holds around 225 nuclear warheads, of which 160 are operational, supported by nuclear missile submarines.[404] Out of 225 nuclear warheads, only four are enough to destabilize the whole Solar System, resulting in the end of human race.

To end the madness of the British monarchs, there is no way out; all doors are closed. The world's great organizations like the United Nations, International Court of Justice, International Criminal Court, all are helpless. The Article 4 of the Universal Declaration of Human Rights states: "No one shall be held in slavery or servitude." Again its Article 1 says, "All human beings are born free and equal in dignity and rights."

The Queen must heed to the lessons of history. She must know that the 'invincible Romans' are gone, founders of one of the largest empires in the world history. With severe brutality, they conquered over five million square kilometers land of the Western Europe, Middle East and North Africa and enslaved around 21% of the world's population at the time. The Romans divided the conquered territory in two empires in West and East. The Western Roman Empire in Europe collapsed after 800 years in 476 AD. The Eastern Roman Empire, also known as the Byzantine Empire survived for over 1400 years that fell to Ottoman Turks in 1453. During the Roman period, most of its emperors were officially raised to the status of a god with the approval of the Roman Senate. For the worship of these gods, a large number of worship places were constructed around the Roman world.

They were the Romans who dared to crucify a man named Jesus of Nazareth. They also stoned to death Saint Stephen in 34 AD, beheaded Saint Paul in 67 AD and crucified Saint Peter in around 68 AD. Thereafter many more saints, bishops and others were martyred. The Roman emperors outlawed Christianity continuously for over three hundred years until 313 AD. To become a Christian was considered a capital crime. Tens of thousands of Christians were crucified, beheaded and tortured to death, simply on the basis that they confessed they were Christians. The Christians were hunted down like wild beasts from one end of the empire to the other and were compelled to sacrifice to Roman gods at the pain of death penalty. They were the Romans who destroyed the Holy Temple and sacked the magnificent city of Jerusalem, killed rather slaughtered its entire population. Finally in 313 AD, despotic emperors of Rome surrendered before Christianity and became its defender. But, they declared bloody wars on those Christians who were non Catholics. Decrees were issued that effectively made Catholicism as the official faith of the Roman Empire. The non Catholic Christians were declared liable to death.

After the fall of the Western Roman Empire, with a gap of about four hundred years, Charlemagne the so-called Great (r. 800 – 814 AD) emerged as the most dominating conqueror, who occupied most of the former territories of the Roman Empire. He also imposed Catholicism as the state religion and killed hundreds of thousands of non Catholic Christians. Again with a gap of four hundred years, a great Habsburg family emerged that ruled Europe for over 800 years. They developed the Austro-Hungarian Empire (1867 to 1918), produced kings of the Kingdom of Bohemia, Kingdom of France (Queen consort), Kingdom of Germany, Kingdom of Hungary, Tsar Empire of Russia, Kingdom of Croatia, Second Mexican Empire, Kingdom of Portugal and Spain, as well as appointed rulers of several Dutch and Italian principalities. They are all gone now.

In the gambling of conquest, the Muslim Turks, rulers of a small principality bordering on Byzantine territory in western Anatolia emerged as the great conqueror under Osman (b. 1258 d. 1326). After a gap of over a century, his descendants captured Constantinople (modern Istanbul, Turkey) in 1453 that was the last remnant of the Byzantine Empire. Later by hiring the warriors for further conquests at the cost of the defeated nations, they occupied vast territories in Europe, Asia and Africa and ruled for over six hundred years. At the great extent of their crime, the Ottomans conquered most of southeastern Europe down to the gates of Vienna, including present-day Hungary, the Balkan Peninsula, Greece and parts of Ukraine; in Asia: Anatolia, Iraq, Syria, Palestine, large parts of the Arabian Peninsula, Egypt and lands in the Caucasus and western Iran. In Europe: Transylvania, Walachia, Moldavia, Crete and the Crimea, while in North Africa: Tripoli, Tunis, and Algeria, comprising in all an area of about 5.5 million kilometers. Today the Ottomans are gone; we are short of information, how many million peoples were killed, displaced and looted for conquering the above lands. At the second half of the 15th century, a majority population of Christians was ruled by the Muslim Ottomans. It was a miracle of conquest.

The Queen of the United Kingdom and of Canada and Australia criminally pressurizes its subjects to take the Oath of Allegiance in her favour and her heirs and successors.[405] This act of the Queen itself is a crime and severe violation of human rights and democratic values. She also violates the verdict of her great father George VI who in 1946, while addressing the first assembly of the United Nations proclaiming 'our faith in the equal rights of men and women and of nations, great and small'. One can understand the helplessness of the Queen Elizabeth, as she can not decide in a right direction at an age of over 90. She would rigoriously fight and crush the humanity to save her inherited wealth, properties and the conquered territories. We

can recall saying of the King Richard I of England (1189 - 1199 AD), "From the Devil we sprang and to the Devil we shall go."

At this point, let us remember Edward VIII, Grandpa of the Queen Elizabeth II, then Emperor of the Great Britain and Emperor of India who threw away the crown for 'love' on January 20, 1936. He had the moral courage to take such a decision. We can also remember Mikhail Gorbachev of the former Soviet Union, who in 1991 was the most powerful man on Earth, holding 25,000 nuclear weapons and the most dominating large army; he amicably dissolved the Soviet Union (former Tsar Russian Empire) declared independence for more than fourteen enslaved nations with less blood shed. We have one more unique example of the King Simeon II of Bulgaria; a former Tsar (1943 to 1946) who abdicated the throne and took part in general elections and became Prime Minister of the Republic of Bulgaria, from July 2001 until August 2005.[259]

The Queen Elizabeth II, instead of artificial life can enjoy normal way of living and may sleep peacefully without fear and cover of hundreds of guards. Slavery or keeping the populace under servitude is a crime and to enjoy luxurious and majestic life at the cost of slaved nations is a sin. The present world is moving ahead for global peace, independence, with a trust in human rights, social equality and religious liberty. The nations defeated by the British monarchs must be liberated for the goodness of humanity. The people of the world now desire to live in peace, in dignity and equality without offering any allegiance to the invaders and conquerors. There is no space left now for the conquerors, kings and emperors.

The Queen Elizabeth II, at least has the chance to do some thing for the forgiveness of the sins and lawless acts committed by her forefathers against humanity. The Lord may give her strength to decide in the right direction, not only for her subjects but for the safety of her own children. She can repent, turn to God and come out of the dominion of darkness.

Bibliography

1. Maddison 2001, pp. 98, 242.
2. Irwin, Douglas A. (December 1991). "Mercantilism as Strategic Trade Policy: The Anglo-Dutch Rivalry for the East India Trade". *The Journal of Political Economy*. The University of Chicago Press. 99 (6): 1296–1314. doi:10.1086/261801. JSTOR 2937731. at 1299.
3. Nenner, Howard (September 2004), "Regicides (act. 1649)", *Oxford Dictionary of National Biography* (online ed.), Oxford University Press, hosted at oxforddnb.com, doi:10.1093/ref:odnb/70599, retrieved 16 August 2010
4. Abbott 2005, pp. 158–159
5. Gentles, Ian J. (2008) [2004], "Harrison, Thomas (bap. 1616, d. 1660)", *Oxford Dictionary of National Biography*, Oxford University Press, hosted at oxforddnb.com, doi:10.1093/ref:odnb/12448, retrieved 19 August 2010
6. Abbott 2005, pp. 159–160 -161
7. Keegan 1998, p. 8.
8. Bade & Brown 2003, pp. 167–168.
9. Willmott 2003, p. 307.
10. Townsend, p. 173
11. Townsend, pp. 267–270
12. Judd, pp. 247–248
13. Carpenter *Struggle for Mastery* p. 129
14. Flori 1999f, pp. 97–101 (French).
15. "Inventory battlefields". *Historic Scotland*. Retrieved 2012-04-12.
16. Black, Jeremy. (2005). *The Seventy Great Battles of All Time*. pp. 71–73. Thames & Hudson Ltd. ISBN 0-500-25125-8.
17. Maidment, J. (1834). *Analecta Scotica: Collections Illustrative of the Civil, Ecclesiastical, and Literary History of Scotland*. T.G. Stevenson. pp. 88–90.
18. "Remembering Flodden | Map of the Battle". *Flodden.net*. Retrieved 2013-09-04.
19. "The Seventy Greatest Battles of All Time". Published by Thames & Hudson Ltd. 2005. Edited by Jeremy Black. Pages 95 to 97. ISBN 978-0-500-25125-6.
20. *Accounts of the Lord High Treasurer of Scotland*, vol. 5, 130, extra locks bought.
21. Guy, 1–11.
22. "Owain Glyndŵr". *Glyndŵr University*. Retrieved 29 March 2016.

Slave Nations Under British Monarchs

23. The Laws in Wales Act 1535 (A.D. 1535 Anno vicesimo septimo Henrici VIII c. 26)
24. Chris Clark, *The Encyclopaedia of Australia's Battles* p.14
25. Lady Jane Griffin Franklin. Penny Russell, ed. *This Errant Lady*. National Library of Australia. p. 47-48. Retrieved 23 November 2014.
26. Davis, Denise; Solomon, Māui (March 2009). "'Mori - The impact of new arrivals'". *Te Ara - the Encyclopedia of New Zealand*. Retrieved 23 March 2011
27. Hart p.44.
28. Karl Watson, "Slavery and Economy in Barbados", BBC. Last updated 17 February 2011.
29. Country Comparison :: GDP - per capita (PPP). CIA World Factbook.
30. From Old Representative System to Crown Colony". *Bigdrumnation.org*. 2008-07-01. Retrieved 2012-03-19.
31. Roberts, Andrew (2014). *Napoleon: A Life*. New York: Viking. pp. 778, 781-82, 784, 801. ISBN 978-0-670-02532-9.
32. *Historic Account of Saint Vincent, the Indian Youroumayn, the island of the Karaÿbes.*- Frere. Adrien Le Breton SJ. (1662-1736) - Museum of Natural History, Fonds Jussieu, Paris
33. CARICOM - Member Country Profile - BELIZE, Caribbean Community. (accessed 23 June 2015)
34. Aldrich & Connell 1998, p. 201.
35. Cayman Islands Constitution, 2009, part III article 49
36. Fergus, Howard A (1996). *Gallery Montserrat: some prominent people in our history*. Canoe Press University of West Indies. p. 83. ISBN 976-8125-25-X.
37. English, Rebecca (16 September 2012). "Carnival Kate met by crowd of 70,000". *Daily Mail*. London.
38. Royal Household. "The Monarchy Today > Queen and Commonwealth". *Queen's Printer*. Retrieved 18 August 2013.
39. Brazier, p. 312.
40. Promissory Oaths Act 1868
41. "Oath of Office". Office of the Official Secretary to the Governor-General. Retrieved 18 September 2013.
42. DEFENCE (PERSONNEL) REGULATIONS 2002 - SCHEDULE 2
43. Scotland Act 1998, section 84(3).
44. National Assembly for Wales (Oath of Allegiance in Welsh) Order 1999, Schedule, Part 1
45. "What the Queen, Prince Charles really knew about Gough's dismissal". *Crikey*. Retrieved 2016-04-20.
46. Victoria (1 July 1867), *Constitution Act, 1867*, IX.128, Westminster: Parliament of the United Kingdom, retrieved 1 April 2009
47. "Review of Oaths and Affirmations - Discussion Paper". Ministry of Justice (New Zealand). May 2004. Retrieved 2008-02-16.

48. Commentarii de Bello Gallico 4.33
49. Taylor, pp. 9–10, citing Diodorus, 16.20; Cornelius Nepos, Timoleon 5, Plutarch, *Moralia* 542 E, Dion 46 and Timoleon 36, 39; Timoleon is the first Greek whose birthday is recorded.
50. Suetonius, *Augustus* 101.4.
51. Josephus, *Antiquities of the Jews* XIX.1.14, XIX.2.4.
52. Tacitus, *Annals* 14.33
53. Tacitus, *The Annals*, 14.31
54. Birley, pg. 459
55. Elton, *Constantine III (407-411 A.D.)*
56. Snyder 1998, *Age of Tyrants*.
57. Gildas. *The Ruin of Britain*. II.26 – Mount Badon is referred to as Bath-Hill in this translation of Gildas text.
58. Winterbottom, M. (1978), *De Excidio britanniae*, Chichester The standard modern edition and translation. Chapter 27
59. Yorke, *Kings and Kingdoms*, p. 25.
60. Ryan 2013, p. 258.
61. Yorke, *Kings and Kingdoms*, p. 176 – 177
62. ASC 890. English translation at Project Gutenberg
63. Rex, pp. 13, 19
64. Krag, Claus. "Harald 3 Hardråde". *Norsk biografisk leksikon* (in Norwegian). Retrieved 30 July 2012.
65. Huscroft *Norman Conquest* pp. 131–133
66. Horspool. *The English Rebel*. p. 13
67. Muir. *The Yorkshire Countryside*. pp. 120–121
68. Bartlett. *England Under the Norman and Angevin Kings*. p. 291
69. Magnusson, p. 61
70. Burton, vol. 1, p. 350, states: "Malcolm the son of Duncan is known as Malcolm III., but still better perhaps by his characteristic name of Canmore, said to come from the Celtic 'Cenn Mór', meaning 'great head'". It has also been argued recently that the real "Malcolm Canmore" was this Malcolm's great-grandson Malcolm IV, who is given this name in the contemporary notice of his death. Duncan, pp. 51–52, 74–75; Oram, p. 17, note 1.
71. Quoted in Barlow *William Rufus* p. 421
72. Lloyd, Arthur (2000). *The Death of Rufus*. The New Forest Ninth Centenary trust. pp. 11–12. ISBN 0-9526120-5-4.
73. Cross, Arthur Lyon (1917) *A History of England and Greater Britain*. New York: Macmillan.
74. William of Malmesbury stated one rustic survived while Orderic Vitalis identified two survivors, a butcher and a Geoffrey, the son of Gilbert de l'Aigle. Compare: J.A. Guiles, *William of Malmesbury's Chronicle of the Kings of England* (London: George Bell and Sons, 1904), p. 456, and Ordericus Vitalis, *The Ecclesiastical History of England and Normandy*, Trans. Thomas Forester, Vol IV (London: Henry G. Bohn, 1856), p. 35.

Slave Nations Under British Monarchs

75. Chibnall 1991, p. 60
76. Carpenter 2004, pp. 169-171
77. Carpenter, pp.164-165; Crouch (1998), p.258.
78. Davis, p.4.
79. White (2000), p.5.
80. Abbot, Edwin A., *St. Thomas of Canterbury* (1898); Compton, Piers, *The Turbulent Priest* (1964); Hollister, Warren C., *Medieval Europe: a short history* (1975)
81. Stanley *Historical Memorials of Canterbury* pp. 53-55
82. The original text of this Bull will be found in Dimock's edition of the works of Giraldus Cambrensis, vol. v, pp. 317-319 (1867).
83. *Views of Ireland: Moral, Political, and Religious*, Vol. 2, Page 84.
84. Warren (2000), p.132.
85. Warren (2000), pp.592-593.
86. Marie-Aline de Mascureau, *Chronologie*, published originally in *Aliénor d'Aquitaine*. *Revue* 303, hors-série no 81, p. 218-223, Nantes 2004, in Edmond-René Labande, *Pour une image véridique d'Aliénor d'Aquitaine*, edited with a preface by Martin Aurell of la Société des antiquaires de l'Ouest-Geste edition of 2005. ISBN 2-84561-224-9, p. 142
87. Gillingham 2002, p. 107.
88. Flori 1999f, p. 95 (French).
89. Gillingham 2002, p. 118.
90. *Restoring the Ancient Paths* - Page 37
91. Flori 1999f, p. 117 (French).
92. Beha-ed-Din, his account appears in Archer, T.A., *The Crusade of Richard I* (1889); Gillingham, John, *The Life and Times of Richard I* (1973).
93. Chisholm, Hugh, ed. (1911). "Richard I". *Encyclopædia Britannica* (11th ed.). Cambridge University Press.
94. "Coats of arms". *The Official Website of the British Monarchy*. Retrieved 25 April 2009.
95. Warren *King John* pp. 160-162
96. Smedley (1836), p. 58
97. *Batailles française 1214 à 1559 du colonel Hardÿ de Périni*
98. Claire Breay is Head of Ancient, Medieval and Early Modern Manuscripts at the British Library. She is co-curator of the Library's major exhibition *Magna Carta: Law Liberty, Legacy* (13 March-1 September 2015) and editor of the exhibition catalogue.
99. - Costain, *The Magnificent Century*, p. 11.
100. Carpenter 1990, p. 13
101. Carpenter 1990, pp. 187-188
102. Jobson 2012, pp. 109-112
103. "A Brief Chronology of the House of Commons", Factsheet G3, General Series, August 2010, House of Commons Information Office

104. Conduit, Brian. *Battlefield Walks in the Midlands*. Sigma Leisure. p. 12. ISBN 978-1-85058-808-5.
105. The Empire of the Steppes: A History of Central Asia. Retrieved 29 September 2014.
106. Powicke 1962, p. 226
107. Tatton-Brown 2015, p. 36.
108. Holt 2015, p. 219
109. Jobson 2012, pp. 109–112
110. Prestwich 1997, pp. 78, 82
111. Carpenter 2004, p. 353
112. Lloyd, J.E. *A history of Wales* p.720-1
113. Stevenson, J., *Documents Illustrative of the History of Scotland*, 1870
114. Prestwich 1997, p. 10
115. "The Scottish Wars of Independence", *Foghlam Alba*
116. Carter 1986, p. 71
117. Peter Traquair *Freedom's Sword*
118. Michael Lynch *A New History of Scotland*
119. "The Battle of Falkirk", *Foghlam Alba*
120. Tanner 1940, pp. 375–376
121. Barrow 1965, p. 216
122. Prestwich 1997, pp. 507–508
123. Barrow 1965, p. 244
124. Prestwich 1997, pp. 556–557
125. See Weir 2006, pp8-9.
126. Sarah Crome, *Scotland's First War of Independence* (Alford: Auch Books, 1999), p. 36
127. One or more of the preceding sentences incorporates text from a publication now in the public domain: Davis, Henry(1911). "Bohun". In Chisholm, Hugh. *Encyclopædia Britannica*. 4 (11th ed.). Cambridge University Press. p. 137.
128. Black, Jeremy. (2005). *The Seventy Great Battles of All Time*. pp. 71–73. Thames & Hudson Ltd. ISBN 0-500-25125-8.
129. Phillips 2011, pp. 248, 281, 329, 343–348
130. Barrow 1965, p. 351
131. Barrow 1965, pp. 351–2
132. Kibler, p.314.
133. Phillips 2011, p. 548
134. Ormrod 2004, p. 177
135. Duffy 2003, p. 119
136. Mortimer, I. (March 2006). *The greatest traitor: the life of Sir Roger Mortimer, Ruler of England: 1327 – 1330*. p. 160. ISBN 978-0-312-34941-7.
137. Kastenbaum (2004), 193-4.
138. Haines 2003, pp. 214–216
139. Haines 2003, pp. 216–217

Slave Nations Under British Monarchs

140. Ormrod 2004, pp. 177–178
141. Rubin 2006, pp. 55–56
142. Mortimer (2006), p. 54. The later fate of Edward II has been a source of much scholarly debate. For a summary of the evidence, see: Mortimer (2006), pp. 405–10
143. Hattendorf & Navy Records Society (Great Britain) 1993, p. 22.
144. Henri de Wailly. Introduction by Emmanuel Bourassin, Crecy 1346: Anatomy of a Battle (Blandford Press, Poole, Dorset 1987) Introduction p. 8
- 145.
146. Henri de Wailly. Introduction by Emmanuel Bourassin, Crecy 1346: Anatomy of a Battle (Blandford Press, Poole, Dorset 1987) pp. 8, 12
147. Ross 2002, p. 226.
148. Kinealy 1994, p. 357.
149. Ormrod 2001, p. 384
150. Francoise Autrand. Charles V King of France in Vauchéz 2000, pp. 283–284
151. One or more of the preceding sentences incorporates text from a publication now in the public domain: Chisholm, Hugh, ed. (1911). "Brétigny". *Encyclopædia Britannica*. 4 (11th ed.). Cambridge University Press. p. 501.
152. Guignebert 1930, Volume 1. pp.304–307
153. Chisholm, Hugh, ed. (1911). "Brétigny". *Encyclopædia Britannica*. 4 (11th ed.). Cambridge University Press. p. 501.
154. Saul (1997), p. 24.
155. Hamby, Alonzo L. (2004). *For the Survival of Democracy: Franklin Roosevelt and the World Crisis of the 1930s*, p. 263. Simon and Schuster. ISBN 0-684-84340-4.
156. Saul (1997), pp. 331–2.
157. Saul (1997), pp. 371–5.
158. Harriss (2005), p. 511.
159. Saul (1997), pp. 279–81.
160. Saul (1997), pp. 403–4.
161. Saul (1997), p. 408.
162. Kendall, Richard the Third pp. 212–213
163. Kendall, Richard the Third p. 368.
164. Charles Mosley (editor). *Burke's Peerage & Baronetage*, 106th Edition. Chicago: Fitzroy Dearborn Publishers, 1999. Volume 1, pages 1378–80
165. Calendar of the Fine Rolls, Henry V, Volume 14, 1413–1422. London. 1934. Pages 274 and 275 (28 March 1419, membrane 36)
166. "Battle of Shrewsbury", UK Battlefields Resource Centre
167. English Heritage (1995). "English Heritage Battlefield Report: Shrewsbury 1403" (PDF). Retrieved 22 Aug 2011.

168. Hallam and Everard, p.65.
169. "BBC Wales - History - Themes - Chapter 10: The revolt of Owain Glyndwr". Retrieved 15 January 2015.
170. Peter McNiven, "The Problem of Henry IV's Health, 1405-1413", *English Historical Review*, 100 (1985), pp. 747-772
171. Debbi Codling, "Henry IV and Personal Piety," *History Today* 57:1 (January 2007): 23-29.
172. Lingard, John, *A History of England*, Vol. V, 1854, pg. 90.
173. Barker 2005, p. 220.
174. *Guardian newspaper*: French correction: Henry V's Agincourt fleet was half as big, historian claims, 28 July 2015
175. Sutherland (2015)
176. Mortimer 2009, p. 443.
177. Guignebert 1930, Volume 1. pp.304-307
178. Pernoud and Clin, p. 221.
179. *Le Procès de Jeanne d'Arc*, in Série "Les grands procès de l'histoire", Ministère de la Justice (France), 6 July 2012:
180. Lingard, John, *A History of England*, Vol. V, 1854, pg. 90.
181. Lingard, John, *A History of England*, Vol. V, 1854, pg. 90.
182. Lingard, p. 91.
183. C T Allmand & Dorothy Styles, "The Coronations of Henry VI", *History Today*, vol 32, issue 5 (1982). Accessed 28 February 2013
184. J.-B. Lebigue, "L'ordo du sacre d'Henri VI à Notre-Dame de Paris (16 décembre 1431)", *Notre-Dame de Paris* 1163-2013, 2013, p. 319-363
185. Andrew Ward (2005) *Joan of Arc* at the Internet Movie Database
186. Brady, Thomas A. (1994). *Handbook of European History 1400-1600*. 2. Leiden: E. J. Brill. p. 373.
187. Lingard, p. 108.
188. Loades 2009, pp. 70-71
189. *Government and Politics in England: problems of succession*, C.S.L. Davies, *The Cambridge Historical Encyclopedia of Great Britain and Ireland*, ed. Christopher Haigh, (Cambridge University Press, 2000), 147.
190. Morgan 2000, pp. 38, 40.
191. Grose, F., *The Antiquarian Repertory* (4 vols, London, 1807-9)
192. Rowse, p. 41; Rubin, p. 284.
193. Haigh 1995, p. 103.
194. Horrox, Rosemary (2004). "Edward IV of England". *Oxford Dictionary of National Biography*. Oxford University Press. Retrieved 25 August 2013.
195. Kennedy, Maeve (6 February 2013). "A long winter of discontent". *The Age* (Melbourne, Victoria, Australia): pp. 16.
196. Chrimes 1999, p. 49.
197. "Westminster Abbey website: Coronations, Henry VII and Elizabeth of York". Retrieved 4 March 2013.
198. Parnell 1993, pp. 38-39

199. 'An Administrative History of Mediaeval Britain', S.B. Chimes (1984, Blackwells of Oxford) p84
200. Wroe, p. 148-151.
201. Macdougall, Norman, James IV, Tuckwell (1997), 123-124, 136, 140-141.
202. "The Execution of Perkin Warbeck", History Today, Issue 11, 1999. Accessed 20 October 2013
203. Penn 2011, p. 70.
204. Waller, p. 16; Whitelock, p. 9
205. Norman, The Roman Catholic Church an Illustrated History (2007), p. 81
206. Account of trial". Retrieved 27 July 2007.
207. Smith, Lacey Baldwin. A Tudor Tragedy. New York: Pantheon Books, 1961.
208. Weir 1991, p. 481.
209. Phillips, p. 150.
210. Cameron, Jamie, James V, The Personal Rule (Tuckwell, East Linton, 1998), 318.
211. Phillips, p. 151
212. Cameron, James V, Tuckwell, (1998), 321: Bain, JS., ed., The Hamilton Papers, vol. 1, (Edinburgh, 1892) 307-308.
213. Michelangelo and the English Martyrs - Page 24
214. The Laws in Wales Act 1535 (A.D. 1535 Anno vicesimo septimo Henrici VIII c. 26)
215. "Remembering Flodden | Map of the Battle". Flodden.net. Retrieved 2013-09-04.
216. Remembering Flodden | Map of the Battle". Flodden.net. Retrieved 2013-09-04.
217. "The Seventy Greatest Battles of All Time". Published by Thames & Hudson Ltd. 2005. Edited by Jeremy Black. Pages 95 to 97. ISBN 978-0-500-25125-6.
218. Goodwin, George. Fatal Rivalry: Flodden 1513. New York: WW Norton, 2013. pp. 9-10.
219. Hannay, R.K., editor, Acts of the Lords of Council in Public Affairs 1501-1554, Edinburgh (1932) pp.1-3.
220. Leproux, Guy-Michel, La peinture à Paris sous le règne de François Ier, Sorbonne (2001), 26.
221. Marshall, R. K., Mary of Guise, Collins (1977), 126-130: Merriman, Marcus, The Rough Wooing, Tuckwell (2000), 124-126: Furgol, Edward M., The Scottish Itinerary of Mary Queen of Scots, PSAS, vol. 107; (1989), 119-231.
222. Davies 2005, p. 687
223. Hart, Kelly (June 1, 2009). The Mistresses of Henry VIII (First ed.). The History Press. ISBN 0-7524-4835-8.

Slave Nations Under British Monarchs

224. Fraser 1994, pp. 17-18; Weir 2008, p. 8; Wormald 1988, p. 55
225. Phillips, p. 193
226. Guy (2004), p. 102
227. Skidmore 2007, p. 258; Loach 1999, p. 167. See Foxe's Acts and monuments, VI, 352.
228. Anonymous (1997) [1850]. "1554, The Execution of Lady Jane Grey and Lord Guildford Dudley". In Nichols, John Gough. *Chronicle of Queen Jane and of Two Years of Queen Mary*. The Camden Society; Marilee Hanson
229. Cokayne, George (1982). *The complete peerage of England, Scotland, Ireland, Great Britain, and the United Kingdom, extant, extinct, or dormant*. 2. Gloucester: A. Sutton. p. 421. ISBN 0904387828.
230. Jesse 1847, pp. 386-387
231. In Ludlow in Shropshire the parishioners complied with the orders to remove the rood and other images in 1547, and in same year spent money on making up the canopy to be carried over the Blessed Sacrament on the feast of Corpus Christi. (Eamon Duffy, *The Stripping of the Altars*, p. 481, Yale University Press, 1992).
232. Heinze 1993, pp. 273-276; MacCulloch 1996, pp. 584-599. Heinze and MacCulloch note that Cranmer's recantations can be deduced from two primary sources that had opposite polemical aims, Bishop Cranmer's Recantations by an unknown author and Acts and Monuments by John Foxe also known as Foxe's Book of Martyrs.
233. Heinze 1993, pp. 277-280; MacCulloch 1996, pp. 600-605. According to Heinze and MacCulloch, an additional corroborating account of Cranmer's execution is found in the letter of a Catholic witness with the initials J. A.
234. Whitelock, p. 288
235. Neale, 70.
236. THE ACT OF SUPREMACY (1559).
237. "Life in Elizabethan England 21: More Religion". Elizabethan.org. 2008-03-25. Retrieved 2013-06-18.
238. On Oriental Orthodoxy's exclusion of marriage after ordination to priesthood, see Deacons Focus of Oriental Orthodox-Roman Catholic Consultation
239. McGrath, Patrick (1967). *Papists and Puritans under Elizabeth I*. Poole, England: Blandford Press. p. 69.
240. Documents of the Christian Church - Page 244
241. Weir 2008, p. 296; Wormald 1988, p. 161
242. Dures 1983, p. 17
243. Weir 2008, p. 508
244. Fraser 1994, p. 509
245. Two of the commissioners were Catholics (Lewis 1999, p. 22).
246. Guy, p. 473
247. Fraser 1994, p. 528

248. Guy 2004, p. 519
249. Guy 2004, p. 496
250. A single meridian is excluded because no lands can be south of it. Two partial meridians are possible, one extending north from a point west of the Azores and another extending south from a point south of the Cape Verde Islands, the two being connected by a north-northwest south-southeast line segment. Another possibility is a rhumb line west and south of the islands extending north-northwest and south-southeast. All rhumb lines reach both poles by spiraling into them.
251. *The Safeguard of the Sea, A Naval History of Britain, 660-1649*, N. A. M. Rodgers, Penguin, 2004, p 263-269
252. In the end as many as two-thirds of the armada's original complement of 30,000 died and for every one killed in battle or perishing of their wounds another six or eight died due to (non-combat losses), Hanson pg 563
253. SparkNotes: Queen Elisabeth – Against the Spanish Armada
254. Henderson, Donald A.; et al. (1999). "Smallpox as a Biological Weapon. Medical and Public Health Management". *JAMA*. 281 (22): 2127–2137.doi:10.1001/jama.281.22.2127. PMID 10367824.
255. "Why do they hide?". Survival International. Retrieved 2013-08-27.
256. Sugden, John (1990). *Sir Francis Drake*. Barrie & Jenkins. p. 118. ISBN 0-7126-2038-9.
257. Black & Flores ("The Spanish Colony").
258. Books associated with Trading Places - the East India Company and Asia 1600-1834, an Exhibition."
259. "Bulgaria". BBC – Country Profiles. Retrieved 14 April 2015.
260. Black, 410-411.
261. John Daniel McVey. "The Union of The Crowns 1603 - 2003". Uotc.scran.ac.uk. Retrieved 2013-10-25.
262. Fraser 2005, pp. 41-42
263. Haynes 2005, pp. 115-116
264. "Oliver Cromwell (1599-1658)".
265. Fraser 2005, pp. 282-283
266. Lister 1838, p. 501
267. An Act for the better discovering and repressing of Popish recusants; 3 & 4 James I c. 4, 1606.
268. "first documented Africans in Jamestown". The History Channel. Retrieved October 20, 2014.
269. Anne of Denmark, Ethel Carleton Williams. Longman, 1970.
270. Cartwright, p 81
271. Robert Jackson, *Sovereignty: The Evolution of an Idea* (Cambridge; Malden, MA: Polity, 2007), p. 57
272. Fitzgibbons 2008, p. 39
273. Croft 2003, p. 101; Willson 1963, pp. 378, 404.

274. An Act for the better discovering and repressing of Popish recusants; 3 & 4 James I c. 4, 1606.
275. Hostettler 1997, p. 137.
276. White 1979, p. 265.
277. Young 1990, p. 232.
278. Young 1990, p. 232.
279. Hostettler 1997, p. 139.
280. Flemion 1973, p. 208.
281. Hostettler 1997, p. 138.
282. Purkiss 2007, p. 93.
283. Rosner & Theibault 2000, p. 103.
284. S. E. Gardiner, History of England from the Accession of James I to the Outbreak of the Civil war 1603-1642 , Vol.9 (Cambridge,2011), p. 354.
285. Siochrú, Micheál (1998). Confederate Ireland 1642-1649 A constitutional and political analysis. Four Courts Press.ISBN 1-85182-400-6.
286. Meehan, Charles Patrick. The Confederation of Kilkenny. 1846. p.27
287. "William Petty's figure of 37,000 Protestants massacred... is far too high, perhaps by a factor of ten, certainly more recent research suggests that a much more realistic figure is roughly 4,000 deaths." Ohlmeyer, Jane; Kenyon, John.The Civil Wars, p. 278.
288. Cust 2005, pp. 326-327; Hibbert 1968, pp. 180-181.
289. Carlton 1995, pp. 234, 236; Hibbert 1968, p. 181.
290. Carlton 1995, pp. 237-238; Hibbert 1968, pp. 181-182.
291. Carlton 1995, p. 238; Cust 2005, pp. 338-341; Gregg 1981, p. 351
292. Mackie, Lenman and Parker, A History of Scotland, pp. 213-4.
293. House of Lords Record Office The Death Warrant of King Charles I
294. Cobbett's State Trials - Page 526
295. The Church of England Magazine, Volume 17
296. Lenihan, p. 111
297. Cone 2003.
298. It is a widespread myth that the Levellers promoted common ownership, or were even "socialists". See, for example, Fenner Brockway Britain's First Socialists, London, Quartet, 1980. But their opposition to common ownership is made clear in the final, May 1649, version of the Leveller "Agreement of the People" and in other Leveler writings.
299. Keith Lindley (1998). The English Civil War and Revolution: A Sourcebook, Routledge, ISBN 0-415-17419-8. pp. 173,174
300. Early Modern Dutch Prints of Africa - Page 23
301. The Mishnah (Sanhedrin 1:6)
302. Woolrych 1982, p.105.
303. Durston, Christopher (1998). The Fall of Cromwell's Major-Generals in English Historical Review 1998 113(450): pp.18-37, ISSN 0013-8266 .

304. Cook 2004, *The Battle of Great Severn*.
305. Royle 2006, p. 729.
306. Gaunt, p.204.
307. The Memoirs of Edmund Ludlow, Lieutenant-General of the Horse in the Army of the Commonwealth of England 1625-1672 Edited with Appendices of Letters and Illustrative Documents by C. A. Firth, M.A., in two volumes. v. II p. 74. published 1894, Clarendon Press, Oxford
308. Miller 1991, pp. 93, 99.
309. It cost the Treasury £321,000 per year. Hutton 1989, p. 184.
310. All dates are given according to the Julian calendar. Note that, when recording British history, it is usual to use the dates recorded at the time of the event. Any dates between 1 January and 25 March have their year adjusted to start on 1 January according to the New Style.
311. Ady, Julia (1894), *Madame, a Life of Henrietta, Daughter of Charles I and Duchess of Orleans*, London: Seeley & Co, pp. 332-33.
312. Hutton 1989, pp. 359-362
313. Alan Marshall, *Intelligence and Espionage in the Reign of Charles II, 1660-1685* (2003), p. 291; Google Books.
314. Milne 1951:95
315. Briggs 1996, p. 84
316. Naish 1991, p. 9
317. Bryant, Mark, *Private Lives*. 2001. p.73.
318. Bryant, Mark, *Private Lives*. 2001. p.73.
319. British Library Learning.
320. "The Bloody Assizes". From Watford Gap to Camelot. Retrieved 20 February 2008.
321. The History of England - Volume 8 - Page 126
322. Troost, 186
323. England, Scotland, and Ireland at time shared a king but were still theoretically separate realms with their own parliaments. In practice, the Parliament of Ireland had been completely under the control of Westminster since Poynings' Law of 1494, but Scotland still had a degree of independence.
324. "Legitimism in England". Retrieved 10 November 2009.
325. Troost, 219-220
326. Davies, 614-615. William was "William II" of Scotland, for there was only one previous Scottish king named William.
327. In this article "New Style" means the start of year is adjusted to 1 January. Events on the European mainland are usually given using the Gregorian calendar, while events in Great Britain and Ireland are usually given using the Julian calendar with the year adjusted to 1 January. Dates with no explicit Julian or Gregorian postscript will be using the same calendar as the last date with an explicit postscript.
328. Younger (1979), pps. 449-450

Slave Nations Under British Monarchs

329. Lenihan 1866, p. 386.
330. Encyclopedia Britannica Mary II (London: Cambridge University, 1911.)
331. Miller, 240
332. Parish register of Saint-Germain-en-Laye, with transcription, at Association Frontenac-Amériques (in French)
333. Van der Kiste, 251-254
334. "William III". Westminster Abbey Official site. Archived from the original on 6 January 2008. Retrieved 8 August 2008.
335. Green, p. 90; Waller, p. 312
336. Queen Anne's veto is recorded as "La Reine se avisera" in 18 H.L. Jour. 506 (1707).
337. Slave Codes of 1705
338. Gregg, pp. 392-394; Somerset, p. 528
339. The London Gazette: no. 5254. p. 1. 24 August 1714.
340. Weir, Alison (1996). Britain's Royal Families: The Complete Genealogy, Revised edition. Random House. pp. 272-276. ISBN 0-7126-7448-9.
341. Carswell p. 65-66
342. Black, George II, p. 253; Thompson, p. 290.
343. Black, pp. 29-31, 53, and 61
344. Weir, pp. 277-278.
345. Taylor.
346. Van der Kiste, p. 13.
347. Trench, pp. 182-184; Van der Kiste, pp. 149-150.
348. Hervey's Memoirs, vol. III, p. 916, quoted in Thompson, p. 124, and Van der Kiste, p.
349. Thompson, p. 124; Trench, p. 199.
350. Roberts (2002), pp. 196-197.
351. Thompson, p. 208; Trench, p. 247.
352. Thompson, p. 275; Trench, p. 292; Van der Kiste, p. 212.
353. George was falsely said to have married a Quakeress named Hannah Lightfoot on 17 April 1759, prior to his marriage to Charlotte, and to have had at least one child by her. However, Lightfoot had married Isaac Axford in 1753, and had died in or before 1759, so there could have been no legal marriage or children. The jury at the 1866 trial of Lavinia Ryves, the daughter of imposter Olivia Serres who pretended to be "Princess Olive of Cumberland", unanimously found that a supposed marriage certificate produced by Ryves was a forgery. Documents relating to the case. The National Archives. Retrieved 14 October 2008.
354. Brooke, p. 612
355. Trevelyan (1912), vol. 1, p. 5.
356. William Weir (2004). The Encyclopedia of African American Military History. Prometheus Books. pp. 31-32.

357. Dull, A Diplomatic History of the American Revolution, ch. 18.
358. Lawrence S. Kaplan, "The Treaty of Paris, 1783: A Historiographical Challenge", *International History Review*, September 1983, Vol. 5, Issue 3, pp 431-42.
359. First Article, Declaration of the Rights of Man and of the Citizen
360. Merryman, John Henry; Rogelip Perez-Perdomo (2007). *The civil law tradition: an introduction to the legal system of Europe and Latin America*. Stanford University Press. p. 16. ISBN 9780804755696.
361. Lee Baker (2007). Gregory Fremont-Barnes, ed. *Encyclopedia of the Age of Political Revolutions and New Ideologies, 1760-1815*. Greenwood Publishing Group. p. 397. ISBN 9780313049514. Retrieved 8 January 2013.
362. Weir, p. 286
363. Cronin, Vincent, Napoleon, 1971, p. 250
364. Fraser, p. 285; Hibbert, pp. 399-402
365. Alison p. 190
366. Letter from Duke of York to George IV, quoted in Brooke, p. 386
367. "Royal Burials in the Chapel since 1805". St George's Chapel, Windsor Castle. Dean and Canons of Windsor. Retrieved 9 November 2009.
368. Brooke, p. 387
369. Innes, Arthur Donald (1914). *A History of England and the British Empire*, Vol. 3. The MacMillan Company. pp. 396-397.
370. Plowden, pp. 75-78; Robins, p. 29
371. Hibbert, George IV: Regent and King 1811-1830, p.336
372. Brock, Michael (2004) "William IV (1765-1837)", *Oxford Dictionary of National Biography*, Oxford University Press, doi:10.1093/ref:odnb/29451. Retrieved 6 July 2007 (subscription required)
373. Strong; Rappaport, 361
374. By Amaury Lorin (9 February 2014). "Grave secrets of Yangon's imperial tomb". *www.mmtimes.com*. Retrieved 13 July 2014.
375. Dalrymple, *The Last Mughal*, p. 474
376. Cambridge 1983, p. 529
377. Bhatia 1970, p. 6.
378. *The Journal of Asian Studies*: volume 32, No 4; pp. 639-659).
379. Cao, Shuji (2001). *Zhongguo Renkou Shi [A History of China's Population]*. Shanghai: Fudan Daxue Chubanshe. pp. 455. and 509.
380. Kinealy 1994, p. xv.
381. Kinealy 1994, p. 5.
382. O'Neill 2009, p. 1.
383. Ross 2002, p. 226.
384. Kinealy 1994, p. 357.
385. Alexandra's bridesmaids were Ladies Diana Beauclerk, Victoria Montagu-Douglas-Scott, Victoria Howard, Elma Bruce, Agneta Yorke, Emily Villiers, Eleanor Hare and Feodora Wellesley.

Slave Nations Under British Monarchs

386. Ridley, p. 409
387. "Archduke Otto von Habsburg", *The Daily Telegraph*, London, 4 July 2011
388. german casualties'
389. Ashton & Hellema 2000, pp. 53-78.
390. Jonathan Petropoulos, *Royals and the Reich*, Oxford University Press (2006) p. 170
391. Nicolson, p. 301; Rose, pp. 210-215; Sinclair, p. 148
392. Clay, p. 326; Rose, p. 173
393. Darrah, David (January 21, 1936). "George V Dies; Edward King". *Chicago Daily Tribune*. p. 1.
394. Rose, Andrew (19 April 2013), "A new documentary suggests Edward VIII's former lover got away with murder thanks to a royal cover-up", *The Daily Mail*
395. Morton, Andrew (2015), *17 Carnations: The Windsors, The Nazis and The Cover-Up*, Michael O'Mara Books, retrieved 2015-05-25
396. Windsor, p. 277
397. Ziegler, pp. 556-557
398. Simple funeral rites for Duchess, BBC, 29 April 1986, retrieved 2 May 2010
399. Sommerville 2011, p. 5.
400. "U.S. Census BureauWorld Population Historical Estimates of World Population". Retrieved March 4, 2016.
401. "Second"Second Source List and Detailed Death Tolls for the Twentieth Century Hemoclysm". *Users.erols.com*. Retrieved March 4, 2016.
402. Durkin, Mary; Gay, Oonagh (21 December 2005), *The Royal Prerogative* (PDF), House of Commons Library, archived from the original (PDF) on 25 June 2008, retrieved 10 October 2008
403. PASC Publishes Government Defence of its Sweeping Prerogative Powers, UK Parliament, 2002, archived from the original on 5 November 2008, retrieved 10 October 2008
404. Prospects for Further Proliferation of Nuclear Weapons(PDF). Special National Intelligence Estimate.CIA. 23 August 1974. p.40. SNIE 4-1-74. Retrieved 20 January2008.
405. Public Works and Government Services Canada (2006), *A Look at Canada* (PDF), Citizenship Rights and Responsibilities, Ottawa: Queen's Printer for Canada. n 40. archived from the original (PDF) on 19 April 2009, retrieved 28 .

Index

- A George, 70
A McDonnell, 70
A McKechin, 70
A Simpson, 70
Abbey, 97, 142, 151, 153, 162, 183, 189,
191, 201, 207, 212, 248, 265, 277, 293,
303, 305, Aberconwy, 199
Aberdeen, 229
Adam, 230, 232, 604
Adeliza, 150
Adrian, 155, 156, 157, 361
Ælla, 136
Æthelred, 138, 139
Æthelwulf, 135
Æthelwulfs, 136
Afghanistan, 18, Africa, 20, 28, 96, 97,
99, 105, 107, 110, 113, 116, 121, 122, 126,
128,
Agra, 35,
Alan Stewart, 226
Alans, 120, 122
Alaric, 121, 123, 124, 125, 126
Alba Longa, 86
Albans, 88, 279, 283
Alex Salmond, 72
Alexander, 104, 156, 157, 158, 181, 214,
217, 224, 226, 253
Alexandria, 100, 102, 105
Alice Perrers, 247
Alnwick, 161
Altaulf, 127
Alton, 150
Americas, 8, 11
Anatolia, 84
Ancalites, 80
Andrew Bonar, 28
Andrew de Moray, 208
Andrew Harclay, 216
Andrews, 210, 229
Anegada, 13
Anglia, 86, 131, 132, 136, 137, 139, 160
Anglican, 29,
Anglicanism, 307
Anglo-Norman, 143, 151, 156, 200, 201,
202, 206, 207, 208, 213, 228, 240, 274
Anglo-Normans, 202, 207, 242, 258, 275
Anglo-Saxons, 130, 131, 132, 133, 134,
137, 144, 145
Anglo-Scottish, 222
Angouleme, 160
Anguilla, 12, 41
Anhui, 24
Anjou, 150, 153, 162, 171, 172, 178, 186,
188, 191, 245, 246, 266, 279, 281, 282,
283, 284, 285, 287
Annabel, 154
Anne, 251, 254, 287, 292, 295, 307
anomoios, 106
Antigua, 11,
Antigua and Barbuda, 11, 41
Appellants, 254
Aquitaine, 153, 161, 162, 169, 177, 188,
191, 232, 241, 267
Archbishop, 142, 154, 155, 162, 174, 178,
186, 200, 204, 228, 250, 253, 262, 281
Arianism, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 112
Arius, 100, 102, 103, 104
Armed Forces, 1, 40, 45
Asia, 20, 28, 101, 116, 120
Atlantic Ocean, 8, 9, 12, 13
Auckland Park, 228
Audley, 302
Augustine, 134
Augustus, 83, 84, 111, 112, 114, 126,
161, 163, 164, 168, 176, 177, 180, 183, 193
Auld Alliance, 206, 227
Aulus Plautius, 81, 85
Australia, 7, 15, 27, 41, 42, 74
Austria, 26, 125, 167, 169, 172
auxiliaries, 81, 88

Slave Nations Under British Monarchs

- Aymer de Valence, 211, 212
 B Iddon, 70
 B Jenkins, 70
 Bahamas, 8, 14, 41
 Bahrain, 16
 Balliol, 154, 203, 204, 205, 206, 207, 222, 223, 224, 225, 227
 Bannockburn, 214, 215, 223
 Barbados, 8, 41
 barbarious, 22
 Baron, 33, 179, 233, 247
 Barons, 39, 175, 187, 193, 194, 198, 203, 215, 218
 Barons', 198
 Bartholomew, 182
 Battle of Alnwick, 147
 Battle of Edington, 137
 Bayonne, 247
 Belgium, 79
 Belize, 11, 41
 Benares, 22
 Bengal, 22, 30, 31, 36, 37
 Berengaria, 166
 Berkely, 33
 Bermuda, 13, 41
 Berwick, 211, 212, 216, 226
 Bibroci, 80
 Bihar, 32
 Birgham, 205
 bishop, 60, 92, 97, 99, 100, 104, 157, 183, 186
 Bishop Wishart, 216
 bishops, 65, 92, 93, 98, 100, 101, 102, 103, 108, 112, 118, 143, 218, 221, 260
 Blois, 150, 151, 160, 242
 Bohemia, 241, 251, 254
 Bohun, 213
 Bombay, 22
 Bordeaux, 241, 247
 Bosworth, 279, 294, 295, 299
 Botswana, 16
 Boudicca, 4, 86, 87, 88
 Boulogne, 160, 176, 300
 Bouvines, 176, 177, 178
 Brabant, 176, 177
 Breteuil, 149
 Bristol, 138, 201, 235, 236, 262
 Britain, 22, 23, 26, 28, 37, 39, 65, 80, 82, 94, 95, 96, 97, 99, 101, 110, 113, 120, 125, 127, 128, 129, 130, 132, 133, 134, 146
 Britannia, 4, 39, 80, 81, 85, 86, 88, 89, 94, 105, 122, 129
 Britannicus, 82
 British, 1, 3, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 19, 20, 22, 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 41, 42, 49, 54, 60, 61, 76, 77, 80, 96, 125, 132, 170, 191, 194, 258
 British colony, 7, 8, 9, 11, 12
 British Empire, 11, 16, 20, 26, 27, 29
 British Overseas Territory, 13, 14
 British soldiers, 27, 38
 British territory, 12
 British Virgin Islands, 12, 41
 Britons, 4, 80, 82, 88, 129, 132, 133, 143, 145
 Brittany, 129, 153, 160, 162, 165, 178, 186, 191, 245, 267, 272, 282
 Bruce, 204, 205, 206, 207, 210, 211, 212, 213, 214, 215, 216, 217, 218, 219, 222, 224
 Brunei, 16
 Bryn Glas, 259
 Buchan, 212
 Builth Wells, 201
 Burgundian, 120, 276
 Burgundy, 186, 241, 270, 273, 275, 281, 289, 297, 299, 301
 Burma, 21
 C McCafferty, 70
 Caerleon, 96, 99
 Caesar, 79, 80, 82, 95
 Caius, 88
 Calcutta, 36
 Caligula, 83, 84
 Callander, 210
 Canada, 8, 27, 29, 41, 43, 45, 46
 Canadian, 45, 47
 Canterbury, 136, 154, 155, 156, 174, 178, 179, 186, 200, 204, 250, 255, 265, 281
 Carausius, 94, 95
 Cardinal Guala, 184, 185
 Caribbean Island, 13
 Caribbean Sea, 8, 9, 11, 13
 Carlisle, 89, 151, 216, 225
 Carrick, 226
 Carthage, 93, 97, 128
 Cassivellaunus, 80
 Catholic, 1, 98, 109, 112, 116, 117, 118, 119, 124, 128, 159
 Catholicism, 89, 103, 105, 111, 112, 116, 117, 120

Slave Nations Under British Monarchs

- Catuvellauni, 80, 81, 87
 Cayman Islands, 13, 41
 Cays, 8, 13
 Celtic, 4, 79, 80, 81, 86, 87, 131, 133, 144,
 145, 146, 159, 203, 205, 206, 265
 Celtic nations, 79
 Cenimagni, 80
 Central America, 11
 Chalisa Famine, 35
 Chalus, 170, 171
 chariots, 80
 Charles Dauphin, 273, 274, 275, 277
 Charles II, 241
 Charles II of Alencon, 241
 Charles IV, 232, 237, 251
 Charles VI, 254, 257, 267, 268, 271, 272,
 277, 280
 China, 21, 22, 23
 Chinese, 22, 23
 Chinon, 274
 Christian, 75, 90, 91, 92, 93, 96, 100, 102,
 107, 113, 114, 115, 121, 122, 126, 134,
 147, 157, 162, 168, 174, 175
 Christianity, 23, 90, 91, 93, 96, 97, 100,
 101, 104, 106, 107, 109, 111, 112, 114,
 115, 117, 120, 125, 127, 134, 137, 185
 Christians, 90, 91, 92, 93, 95, 96, 97, 109,
 111, 113, 118, 119, 122, 123, 126, 127, 133
 Christina, 212
 Church, 1, 6, 52, 59, 92, 94, 99, 100, 102,
 106, 108, 109, 120, 149, 154, 157, 159,
 220, 231, 233, 235, 256, 294
 Clare, 33, 215, 231, 236
 Clarendon, 154, 156
 Claudius, 81, 82, 85, 87
 Clergy, 59, 172, 192
 Constable Hay, 229
 Cornwall, 132, 188, 194
 Crecy, 241, 248
 Crown Colony, 13
 Crusade, 148, 163, 164, 167, 172, 190,
 192, 195, 275
 Cyprus, 16, 162, 166, 167, 191
 Dafydd, 200, 201
 Dalmatia, 124, 125
 Dalmatius, 104
 Damette, 152
 Danes', 137
 Daoguang's, 21
 David, 73, 151, 218, 221, 222, 224, 225,
 227, 228, 229
 David Steel, 73
 Delhi, 35, 37
 Denmark, 135, 138, 139
 Dennis Skinner, 66
 Devon, 286
 Diocletian, 91, 93, 94
 Divine, 85, 156, 158, 173, 191, 192
 Dominica, 16
 Donald, 223, 224
 Douglas, 226, 228
 Dover, 95, 236
 Dregghorn, 226
 Drug-traffickers, 21
 Dublin, 203
 Duke, 10, 142, 150, 162, 169, 172, 176,
 177, 191, 242, 246, 251, 252, 255, 256,
 257, 268, 270, 275, 278, 279, 281, 283,
 284, 285, 288, 289, 290, 292, 296, 299, 300
 Dyke, 13
 Earl of Arundel, 237, 255
 Earl of Ilennox, 226
 Earl of Moray, 214, 222, 228, 229
 Earldom, 152
 Earls of Ross, 226
 Edinburgh, 207, 217, 222, 225, 226
 Edmund, 187, 194, 195, 215, 216, 256,
 259, 261, 283, 285, 289, 295
 Edmund Butler, 216
 Edward, 138, 140, 188, 189, 190, 194,
 195, 196, 197, 198, 199, 200, 201, 202,
 203, 204, 205, 206, 207, 208, 209, 210,
 211, 212, 213, 214, 215, 216, 218, 219,
 222, 223, 224, 225, 226, 227, 230, 231,
 232, 233, 234, 236, 237, 238, 239, 240,
 241, 242, 244, 246, 247, 248, 249, 252, 257,
 269, 278, 283, 284, 286, 287, 288, 289,
 290, 291, 292
 Edward II, 203, 216, 231, 234, 235, 237
 Edward III, 223, 227, 231, 234, 235, 240,
 244, 269
 Egypt, 16, 28, 84, 100, 102, 121, 168
 Eleanor, 153, 159, 162, 169, 186, 187,
 194, 195, 198, 200, 215, 230, 231, 236
 Elizabeth, 1, 6, 9, 10, 39, 40, 45, 46, 48,
 49, 56, 60, 61, 74, 146, 212, 290, 293, 294,
 296
 Elizabeth II, 1, 40
 Emperor Otto IV, 176, 177
 England, 1, 2, 6, 7, 19, 23, 24, 25, 27, 33,
 34, 39, 40, 47, 49, 50, 55, 57, 60, 79, 80,
 81, 82, 131, 132, 133, 135, 136, 137, 138,

Slave Nations Under British Monarchs

- 139, 140, 141, 142, 143, 144, 145, 146,
147, 148, 150, 151, 153, 154, 155, 156,
158, 160, 161, 162, 167, 169, 170, 171,
172, 173, 174, 175, 176, 178, 179, 180,
181, 183, 185, 186, 188, 189, 190, 191,
192, 193, 194, 195, 196, 197, 198, 199,
200, 201, 202, 205, 206, 208, 209, 213,
214, 215, 216, 217, 218, 219, 221, 222,
223, 225, 227, 228, 231, 232, 233, 237,
238, 239, 240, 242, 243, 244, 245, 246,
247, 248, 249, 251, 254, 256, 257, 258,
259, 260, 261, 263, 266, 271, 272, 274,
275, 276, 277, 278, 279, 280, 281, 282,
284, 285, 286, 288, 289
Essex, 81, 131, 206, 250, 251
Eu, 241
Eudes, 182
Europe, 96, 116, 134, 162, 176, 208, 243
Eustace, 149, 178, 182, 184
Exeter, 178, 192, 235, 287
Falkland Islands, 12, 41
Felix II, 106
Ferrand, 177
Fiji, 16
First Opium War, 25
First World War, 20, 27, 28
Fitz, 178
FitzUrse, 155
Flanders, 160, 176, 177, 186, 208, 242,
245, 267, 289
Flemish, 144, 177, 239
France, 9, 19, 26, 27, 79, 99, 120, 142,
143, 146, 148, 153, 154, 159, 161, 163,
167, 169, 170, 171, 172, 173, 175, 176,
178, 180, 185, 186, 187, 191, 193, 195,
196, 197, 198, 204, 206, 207, 224, 227,
228, 230, 232, 237, 238, 239, 240, 241,
242, 243, 244, 245, 246, 247, 248, 253,
254, 257, 260, 266, 267, 270, 272, 274,
275, 276, 277, 278, 279, 280, 281, 282
Francis Lovell, 298
French, 142, 144, 146, 148, 153, 160, 170,
172, 175, 177, 178, 181, 183, 184, 185,
186, 187, 188, 190, 191, 192, 193, 208,
217, 230, 232, 237, 238, 239, 241, 242,
244, 245, 246, 247, 248, 257, 260, 266,
267, 268, 269, 270, 271, 273, 274, 275,
277, 278, 281, 283, 284
French King, 177, 183, 190, 209, 232,
248, 268, 281
Frigidus, 116, 121
Gaelic, 206
Gainsborough, 138
Galerius, 91, 93, 108
Galla Placidia, 126
Gambia, 16
Gandhi, 38
Gascony, 162, 173, 187, 188, 191, 196,
209, 282
Gastria, 167
Gaul, 79, 94, 99, 105, 110, 113, 114, 115,
120, 122, 127, 129
Gaveston, 231
Genius Britanniae, 95
Geoffrey, 150, 153, 159, 161, 162, 165,
182
George IV, 50
Germany, 26, 79, 130, 153, 170, 176
Gervase, 152
Ghana, 16
Gibraltar, 29
Gifford, 182
Gildas, 130, 132
Gillies Hill, 214
Gladstone, 24
Gloucester, 138, 149, 183, 213, 215, 235,
252, 255, 268, 279, 289, 291
Glyndwr, 260, 264
Godwinson, 141
Goldsworthy, 70
Gothic, 107, 112, 113, 120, 122, 124, 129
Goths, 107, 112, 123
Graham Earl, 229
Great Britain, 10, 22, 25, 32, 37, 39
Great Indian Famine, 36
Greece, 102, 120
Greek, 107, 220
Grenada, 9, 41
Grenadines, 11
Greyfriars, 211
Guala Bicchieri, 183
Guinea, 28
Guthrum, 137
Guy of Lusignan, 167
Guyana, 16, 38
Guyenne, 245
Gwenllian, 201
Gyrth, 141
Hannibalianus, 104
Harold, 140, 141
Henry, 148, 149, 150, 151, 152, 153, 154,
155, 156, 157, 158, 159, 160, 161, 162,

Slave Nations Under British Monarchs

- 166, 169, 172, 176, 181, 182, 183, 184,
 185, 186, 187, 188, 189, 190, 191, 192,
 193, 194, 195, 196, 197, 198, 202, 211,
 213, 222, 228, 247, 252, 255, 256, 257,
 258, 259, 260, 261, 262, 263, 265, 266, 267,
 268, 269, 270, 271, 272, 277, 278, 279,
 280, 281, 282, 283, 284, 285, 287
 Henry II, 149, 152, 156, 160, 162
 Henry III, 176, 183, 184, 193, 198
 Henry IV, 252, 255, 257, 258, 261, 263
 Henry V, 150, 262, 271, 279, 293, 295
 Herleva, 142
 Hertfordshire, 96
 Hispania, 105, 122, 129
 Hissar, 35
 Holland, 79, 176
 holy baptism, 119
 homousios, 106
 Honduras, 11
 Hong Kong, 21, 23
 Hong Xiuquan, 23
 hostages, 79, 166, 174, 246
 House of Commons, 62, 63, 67, 68, 75
 Hubei, 24
 Hugh, 155, 185, 226, 232, 235, 236
 Hugh de Morville, 155
 Hugues Quieetr, 240
 Hugues Quieret, 239
 Humphrey, 268, 279
 Huntingdon, 152
 I Davidson, 70
 Ich Dien, 242
 India, 16, 21, 22, 27, 30, 31, 33, 34, 36,
 37, 38
 Ira Klein, 38
 Iraq, 17, 28
 Ireland, 6, 27, 33, 35, 49, 53, 54, 58, 76,
 156, 157, 158, 159, 203, 209, 214, 216,
 251, 254, 255, 256, 257, 273, 296, 299
 Isabel, 182
 Isabella, 181, 212, 217, 230, 232, 233,
 234, 236, 237, 254, 256, 257
 islands of Tortola, 13
 Isle of Man, 10, 255
 Israel, 16, 28, 426, 540, 769
 Italy, 26, 27, 99, 105, 114, 115, 121, 122,
 128, 129, 196
 J Austin, 69
 J Hemming, 70
 J Swinson, 71
 Jamaica, 8, 41
 Jasper, 296
 Jersey, 9
 Jerusalem, 85, 162, 165, 166, 167, 168,
 169, 265
 Jesus, 84, 90, 91, 94, 102
 Jew, 219
 Jewish, 28, 55, 85, 163, 164, 187, 199
 Jewish homeland, 28
 Jiangsu, 24
 Jiangxi, 24
 Joan, 154, 165, 166, 182, 222, 227, 231,
 236, 237, 241, 243, 247, 273, 274, 275,
 276, 277
 John Beauchamp, 253
 John de Gray, 174
 Jordan, 17 Jost Van, 13
 Julia Gillard, 74
 Juliana, 149
 Jupiter, 83, 84, 86, 93, 124, 128
 K Purchase, 70
 Kenneth de Moravia, 226
 Kenya, 17
 Kevin McNamara, 63, 64, 65
 Khiokitia, 167
 Kinderton, 262
 King Alexander, 203
 King banished, 199
 King Berhtwulf, 136
 King Charles IV, 232, 237
 King Charles V, 247
 King Charles VI, 271
 King Charles VII, 275, 276, 281
 King David, 151, 228, 229
 King Edward, 141, 144, 190, 198, 200,
 205, 208, 210, 211, 213, 216, 217, 218,
 221, 223, 225, 227, 228, 229, 230, 231,
 232, 233, 234, 237, 238, 239, 240, 242,
 243, 244, 245, 246, 247, 248, 285
 King Edward I, 198, 230, 231
 King Henry, 155, 184, 188, 194, 197, 257,
 261, 270, 272, 277, 278, 280, 281, 282,
 287, 289, 294, 295, 298
 King Henry IV, 261
 King Isaac Komnenos, 168
 King John, 173, 175, 181, 192, 244, 246,
 249
 King Louis, 153, 155, 160, 188, 190, 290
 King Louis VII, 153, 155
 King Malcolm III, 147
 King Philip, 166, 169, 176, 177, 183, 191,
 209, 224, 230, 239, 241

Slave Nations Under British Monarchs

King Phillip VI, 227
 King Richard, 163, 166, 169, 250, 251, 254, 289
 King Sancho VI, 166
 King Stephen of Blois, 150
 King Sweyn, 138
 King William I of Scotland, 164
 King William II, 147, 165
 Kiribati, 17
 Kuwait, 17
 L Jones, 70
 La Rochelle, 177
 Lackland, 171, 184
 Latin, 83, 134, 218
 lead, 74, 79
 Leicester, 187, 198
 Leofwine, 141
 Leopold V, 167, 169, 172
 Leopold's, 168, 623
 Lesotho, 17
 Licinia Eudoxia, 128
 Liddesdale, 224, 229
 Lincoln, 178, 184, 192, 193, 297, 298
 Lindisfarne, 135
 Llewellyn., 198
 Llewelyn, 197, 198, 200
 Londinium, 87, 95
 Lord Egremont, 286
 Lorraine, 176, 242, 965, 981
 Louis, 160, 161, 180, 181, 183, 184, 186, 188, 190, 193, 195, 242, 246, 288
 Louis II, 242
 Louis VII, 160
 M Caton, 70
 M Clapham, 70
 M Horwood, 70
 M Oaten, 70
 MacDuff, 212
 Macedonia, 105
 Machynlleth, 259
 Madras, 22, 36
 Magna Carta, 179, 180, 183, 192, 197
 Magna Carta, 184, 193
 Magnentius, 105
 Majesty's, 40, 42
 Malawi, 17
 Malaysia, 17
 Malcolm III, 147, 150
 Maldives, 17
 Malta, 17
 Malwa, 22
 Manduessedum, 88
 Maol Choluim II, 226
 Marcellinus, 99
 Marcus Carausius, 94
 Marguerite, 160
 Marischal Keith, 229
 marry Pedro, 243
 Martin McGuinness, 77
 Mary, 212
 Maud, 182, 247
 Maurice Earl, 229
 Mauritius, 17, 38
 mayaguana, 14
 Mediterranean islands, 121
 Menteith, 210, 224, 229
 Mercia, 131, 136, 139
 Methven, 212
 Michael, 251, 253, 273
 Michael de la Pole, 251, 253
 Milan, 111, 114, 115, 116, 117, 121
 Miletus, 84
 Military, 42, 47
 Mir Jaffar, 31
 Montferrat, 168
 Montserrat, 13, 41
 Moray, 224
 Mtilda, 154
 Mursa, 105
 Muslim, 55, 164, 168
 Myanmar, 17
 N Baker, 69
 Namibia, 28
 Nantes, 153, 162, 191
 Natal, 38
 Nauru, 17
 Naval, 42, 240
 Neil, 212, 214
 Neville, 228, 253, 287, 289, 292
 Neville's, 228
 New Zealand, 7, 27, 41, 47, 48, 49
 Newcastle, 151, 211, 213, 236, 262
 Nicaen Creed, 106
 Nicea Creed, 103
 Nicolas Behuchet, 239
 Nigeria, 17
 Nobleman Walter Tirel, 148
 Norfolk, 252, 262
 Noricum, 125
 Norman Viking, 6
 Norman Vikings, 141, 145
 Norse armies, 136

Slave Nations Under British Monarchs

- North America, 8, 14, 20
 North Ireland, 7, 40
 Northampton, 201, 217, 222, 225, 279, 284
 northern Gaul, 94
 Northumbria, 131, 136, 139, 151
 Nuzareth, 84
 Oath of Allegiance, 39, 45, 47, 48, 49, 55, 56, 60, 61, 67, 68, 77
 Oceania lying, 14
 Oireachtas, 76
 Oliver, 182
 opium, 21, 22, 23, 30, 34
 Opium, 21, 22, 24, 30
 Orissa, 32, 35
 Osbert, 182
 Ostrogoths, 107, 120, 122
 Ottoman Empire and Bulgharia, 26
 Owain Glyndwr, 258, 259, 261, 264, 265
 Oxford, 33, 138, 139, 187, 188, 251, 259, 281, 298
 Oxford University, 33
 P Bottomley, 69
 P Flynn, 70
 Pacific Ocean, 14, 15
 pagan, 96, 100, 108, 109, 111, 115, 120, 132, 133, 134
 Paganism, 89
 Pakistan, 17
 Palestine, 28, 102
 Pallig Tokesen, 138
 Papal, 167, 180, 183
 Papua New Guinea, 14, 15, 41
 Patna, 22
 Paul, 90, 126, 181, 256
 Paullinus, 88
 Percy, 211, 228, 247, 261, 262, 263, 283
 perish, 87
 Perth, 207, 211
 Philip, 161, 163, 164, 165, 166, 167, 170, 171, 172, 175, 176, 177, 178, 180, 182, 193, 197, 224, 227, 237, 238, 242, 244, 249, 271, 275, 281
 Philip II, 161, 170, 183
 Philip III, 237
 Philip of Cognac, 171
 Phillip III, 230
 Poitou, 153, 160, 172, 187, 188, 191, 245
 Poland, 242
 Police forces, 45
 pope Adrian IV, 157
 Pope Alexander III, 156, 157
 Pope Benedict XIII, 260
 Pope Boniface VIII, 167, 204
 Pope Celestine III, 169
 Pope Clement VI, 243
 Pope Honorius, 184
 Pope Innocent III, 174, 175, 180
 Pope Liberius, 106
 Pope Sylvester, 99, 102
 Portugal, 176
 Prince Edward, 203, 213, 230, 232, 234, 240, 287
 Qatar, 17
 Quadi, 109, 110, 122
 Queen Eleanor, 230
 Queen Elizabeth II, 1, 6, 9, 10, 39, 45, 49, 60, 74, 146
 Queen Joan, 165
 Queen Philippa, 247
 Queen Victoria, 22, 24, 34, 35, 36
 Quercy, 153, 245
 R Campbell, 69
 Raby, 228
 Ragnar, 136
 Ralph, 152, 228
 Randolph Earl, 229
 Raoul, 215, 241
 Ravenna, 121, 123, 125, 129
 Raymond, 28
 Realm, 51, 56, 71, 279, 320
 Rebel, 113, 160, 161, 179, 180, 181, 183, 184, 189, 192, 195, 199
 rebellion, 25, 152, 161, 189, 195, 196, 287
 Rebellion, 23, 159
 refuge in Cologne, 177
 Reginald, 155
 Reims, 238, 244, 270, 274, 275, 277
 Renaud, 176, 177
 Restitutor Britanniae, 95
 Rhea, 86
 Rhine, 79, 122
 Rhuddlan, 200, 201, 202
 Richard, 66, 153, 155, 159, 161, 162, 163, 164, 165, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170, 171, 172, 175, 181, 188, 191, 192, 194, 247, 248, 249, 250, 251, 252, 253, 254, 255, 256, 257, 258, 262, 278, 283, 284, 288, 289, 290
 Richard Burgon, 66
 Richard III, 291, 292, 293, 294
 River Tyne, 89

Slave Nations Under British Monarchs

- Robert, 31, 32, 73, 142, 147, 148, 149,
150, 167, 178, 196, 203, 204, 205, 206,
210, 211, 213, 214, 215, 216, 217, 218,
219, 222, 224, 228, 236, 239, 240, 248,
250, 251, 252, 253, 259, 273
Robert Bruce, 204
Robert Burns, 73
Robert Clive, 31, 32
Robert the Bruce, 205, 213
Roger Mortimer, 225, 233, 234, 235, 236,
255
Rollo, 142
Roman Emperor, 81, 89, 92, 95, 96, 107,
108, 111, 122, 127, 128, 129, 150, 169,
172, 176, 177, 251
Roman Empire, 83, 84, 90, 93, 96, 101,
104, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110, 113, 114,
116, 117, 120, 121, 127, 128, 240
Roman law, 86, 91
Rome, 51, 79, 80, 81, 82, 83, 85, 86, 87,
88, 89, 90, 91, 92, 93, 99, 106, 111, 115,
116, 122, 123, 124, 125, 126, 127, 196
Romulus, 83, 86, 128
Rosamund, 154
Rosie Kane, 73
Rouen, 171, 268, 271, 276
Royal Air Force, 61
Royal Navy, 61
Rudolph, 242
Runnymede, 179, 192
Russian, 26
Rutland, 285, 289
Sabine, 86
sadr, 39
Saint George, 94
Saint Helena, 9, 41
Saint Kitts and Nevis, 11, 41
Saint Lucia, 9, 41
Saint Peter, 91, 126
Saint Vincent and the Grenadines, 11,
41
Saint Wilfrid, 134
Saint-Omer, 240
Saladin at Arsuf, 168
Salisbury, 144, 253
Savoy, 186, 250
Saxon, 2, 94, 128, 129, 130, 133, 134, 135,
136, 139, 141, 142, 143, 144, 145, 148,
151, 177, 181, 247
Saxton, 285
Scotland, 6, 7, 27, 40, 57, 72, 130, 147,
150, 151, 160, 161, 164, 181, 203, 204,
205, 206, 207, 208, 209, 210, 212, 213,
216, 217, 218, 220, 221, 222, 223, 224,
225, 226, 227, 229, 252, 260, 262, 273,
285, 286
Scots, 110, 113, 206, 207, 209, 211, 213,
214, 215, 216, 220, 221, 222, 223, 225,
226, 227, 228, 229, 252, 263
Scottish kings, 147, 151, 204
Segontiaci, 80
Selkirk forest, 210
Sempringham, 201
Seychelles, 17
Sicily, 99, 126, 153, 165, 166, 187, 194,
195, 196
Sierra Leone, 17
Sikh, 55
Simon de Montfort, 187, 189, 194, 195,
198
Simon De Montfort, 188, 189, 194
Singapore, 21
Sinn Féin, 68, 75, 76, 77
Sir Andrew, 286
Sir Archibald Douglas, 225, 226
Sir Edmund de Mauley, 215
Sir Henry, 223
Sir James Berners, 253
Sir Malcolm, 229
Sir Nicholas Brembre, 253
Sir Pain de Tiptoft, 215
Sir Robert de Clifford, 215
Sir Simon Burley, 253
Sir Thomas Randolph, 214, 222
Sirajul Dula, 31
Skerne, 248
Solomon Islands, 14, 41
Solway, 89
Sophia, 51
South Africa, 18, 27
South America, 12
South Georgia and the South Sandwich
Islands, 12, 41
South Pacific, 21
Southern Atlantic Ocean, 12
South-West Africa, 28
Spain, 110, 113, 114, 120, 122, 127, 254,
260
Sri Lanka, 18, 21, 38
St Albans, 96
Stamford, 141, 178

Slave Nations Under British Monarchs

- Stapeldon, 235
 Stephen, 150, 151, 152, 153, 174, 178, 179
 Stephen Langton, 174
 Stilicho, 121, 122, 123
 Stirling, 207, 208, 209, 211, 213, 214
 Stirling Bridge, 208, 209
 Sudan, 18
 Suebi, 120, 122
 Suetonius, 82, 88
 Suffolk, 88, 251, 275
 Surrey, 136, 252
 Sussex, 131, 132, 134, 141
 Sutherland, 226
 Swaziland, 18
 Switzerland, 79
 Tacitus, 88
 Tanzania, 18, 28
 temples, 84, 108, 111, 117
 Theobald, 176
 Theodosian, 115, 117, 120
 Theonas, 103
 Thomas, 154, 214, 222, 229, 252, 254, 255, 262
 Thomas de Beauchamp, 252
 Thomas de Mowbray, 252, 263
 Togodumnus, 81
 Tommy Sheridan, 72
 Tonga, 18
 Tony Benn, 61, 62, 64
 Toulouse, 153
 Touraine, 178, 245, 266
 Towton, 278, 285
 Treason Felony, 64
 Trinidad and Tobago, 18
 Trinity, 101, 118, 265
 Triumph, 82, 85, 116, 243
 Trollope, 286
 Tudor, 280
 Turkey, 84
 Turks and Caicos Islands, 14, 42
 Tuvalu, 14, 41
 Tyler, 250
 Uganda, 18
 United Arab Emirates, 18
 United Kingdom, 6, 9, 26, 39, 40, 46, 49, 52, 62
 United States, 18, 26, 27
 Upper Doab Famine, 35
 Valentine, 107, 109, 110
 Vandals, 107, 120, 122, 127
 Vanuatu, 18
 vassals, 147
 Venetia, 125
 Vernon, 262
 Verulamium, 88, 96, 97
 Vicar, 220
 Viking, 135, 136, 137, 142, 145
 Viking Danes, 135, 145
 Virgin Gorda, 13
 Visigoths, 107, 120, 125, 126
 Wales, 6, 7, 40, 49, 55, 57, 73, 74, 81, 82, 97, 130, 132, 147, 149, 152, 154, 180, 182, 197, 198, 199, 200, 201, 202, 212, 214, 233, 242, 258, 259, 260, 261, 263, 265, 273, 287, 290, 294
 Wallace, 207, 208, 209, 210
 Walter, 148, 178, 235, 259
 Waltham, 212
 War of Saint-Sardos, 232
 Warwick, 252, 255, 287, 289, 290, 292, 296
 Wessex, 131, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137, 139, 140, 146
 White soldiers, 38
 William de Tracey, 155
 William Ewart Gladstone, 24
 William IV, 226
 William Longchamp, 164
 William Longespee, 176, 177
 William Marshal, 183, 184, 185, 193
 William Rufus, 147
 William the Bastard, 6, 7, 19, 21, 50, 141, 142, 144, 146, 205
 William the Conqueror, 141, William Zouche, 228
 Wiltshire, 286
 Winchelsea, 204
 Winchester, 70, 148, 181, 183, 186, 232, 235, 280
 Winston Churchill, 37
 Yemen, 18
 Yermsoyia, 167
 York, 89, 99, 136, 141, 142, 154, 155, 162, 164, 201, 209, 216, 228, 236, 253, 256, 262, 263, 269, 278, 283, 284, 288, 289, 290
 Zhejiang, 24



Until this day, thirty (30) countries of the world are still under the servitude of the British monarchs, currently controlled by the reigning Queen Elizabeth II, who is deemed the "Fount of Justice, the Fount of Honour and the source of all Dignities. The Queen is above the law holds that she "can do no wrong" (probably fallen from the Heaven). Queen Elizabeth II is Commander-in Chief of the British Armed Forces and the Supreme Governor of the established Church of England, parallel in status to the Pope of the Roman Catholic Church.

